

8 7 3 6 8

**The  
Ramakrishna Mission Institute of Culture Library  
CALCUTTA.**

**LATE FEE:** 5 P. per day after the last date stamped below. P 116.1 1-1

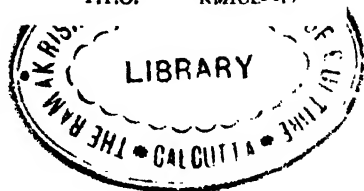
**RENEWALS:** By post, telephone or in person. Please quote the number stamped on the pocket opposite and last date below.

15 JUN 1992

13 SEP 1964

P.T.O.

RMICL-17





# HUDIBRAS





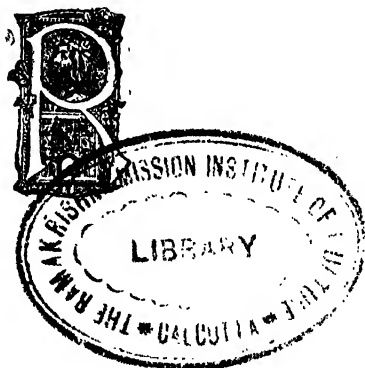
# HUDIBRAS

BY

SAMUEL BUTLER

*WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY HENRY MORLEY*

LL.D., LATE PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH LITERATURE AT  
UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, LONDON



LONDON

GEORGE ROUTLEDGE AND SONS LIMITED  
NEW YORK: E. P. DUTTON AND CO.

PMI LIBRARY	
Acc. No.	87368
Class. No.	
Vol.	16.6.75
Author	P.S.
Title	R.2.
Subject	S.2.
Notes	S.Sg
Checked	Rg

## INTRODUCTION.

---

SAMUEL BUTLER was born in February, 1612, and was baptized on the 8th of February, according to the parish registers kept by his father, who rented a farm in Worcestershire, in the parish of Strensham. Samuel, named after his father, was the fifth child in a family of seven. He was educated in the Worcester College School, and passed from school, probably after some training in an attorney's office, into employment as clerk to a Justice of the Peace, Mr. Thomas Jefferies, of Earl's Croome, near Strensham. Butler's genius gave him already the tastes of an artist and a scholar. He made pictures, and he compiled for himself, as aid to his private studies, a French dictionary, and an abridgment, in Law French, of Coke upon Littleton. From the service of Mr. Jefferies, Butler passed into that of the Earl of Kent, at Wrest, in Bedfordshire.

Henry Lord Grey de Ruthin, in 1625, succeeded his brother in the Earldom of Kent. The estates of his earldom were entangled among lawsuits that raised questions of title, and gave large employment to Selden's powers of research. The Earl had wisely chosen in John Selden the one man in all England who was best able to help him. Selden was much at Wrest; and Butler was probably engaged to live at Wrest as a quick-witted clerk employed under Selden's direction. Anthony à Wood says that Butler often wrote letters beyond sea for Selden, and translated for him. It was education to work under so true a scholar, and there was a large library at Wrest from which Butler could gather some part of that store of knowledge, wittily applied, which gives strength to his satire.

Good service at Wrest probably was Butler's recommendation, when he had finished his work there, to another

house in Bedfordshire, that of Sir Samuel Luke at Cople Hoo Farm, three miles from Bedford. Sir Samuel Luke was a strict Presbyterian, who served afterwards as colonel in the army of the Parliament.

“Then did Sir Knight abandon dwelling,  
And out he rode a colonelling.”

There is no doubt that young Butler's observations of the sayings and doings of Sir Samuel and his friends provided matter for his poem. Indeed, he tells us, by the rhyme that helps us to fill up a blank, that Sir Samuel Luke was the man whom he had most in mind as model for his *Hudibras*:

“’Tis sung, there is a valiant Mameluke  
In foreign lands, yclept —  
To whom we have been oft compared  
For person, parts, address and beard.”

During the Civil War we know only that, in whatever way Butler was earning his bread, he was working at the first part of his poem; and then, and in the Commonwealth time, turning over in his mind many a couplet stored for future use. His remains show that as thoughts struck him he arranged them into complete form and kept note of them.

It is not until immediately after the Restoration that we again learn how Butler was earning his bread. He is still found in the old calling, taking office as steward or secretary to the Earl of Carbery, Lord President of the West, at Ludlow Castle. It is the same Earl of Carbery, who, during the Commonwealth, had been, at Golden Grove by the Towey, patron and friend to Jeremy Taylor.

About this time Samuel Butler married a lady named Herbert, who at one time had property, and lost it, by investment in unsafe securities, either before or soon after her marriage.

Not long after Butler's marriage there appeared a little pocket volume, of 125 pages, in 16mo, measuring less than six inches by four, entitled “*Hudibras. The First Part. Written in the time of the late Wars,*” with a pair of woodcuts, side by side, representing the rose and the thistle, each bearing a crown. The “*Imprimatur*” is dated November 11, 1662, and 1663 is the date on the title-page; but there

is no publisher's or printer's name. This first issue of "Hudibras" was an unauthorized edition that anticipated Butler's own. In the *Public Intelligencer*, of December 23, 1662, the following advertisement was inserted: "There is stolen abroad a most false, imperfect copy of a poem, called 'Hudibras,' without name either of printer or bookseller, as fit for so lame and spurious an impression. The true and perfect edition, printed by the author's original, is sold by Richard Marriot, under St. Dunstan's church, in Fleet Street." Butler's own edition came out, in small 8vo, in 1663; but side by side with it reappeared the little piracy, page for page set like the first, but a reprint, with some corrections of the text, and without the rose and thistle on the title-page. Thus the first part of Butler's poem was anticipated by a thief, actively undersold, and much of his fair profit from it intercepted.

The thief seems to have gone on to forgery, for uniform with the spurious editions there next appeared in 1663, before Butler himself was ready with his second part, a contemptible fabrication inscribed on its title-page "Hudibras. The Second Part, with the continuation of the Third Canto; to which is added a Fourth Canto. By the Same Author. Published to undeceive the Nation." Butler's own Second Part appeared in 1664.

The King and Court delighted in the hits at their opponents. The King carried the new book about in his pocket, probably the thief's edition, which came first and was very portable. But for the author, Charles the Second cared nothing and did nothing. Butler was essentially a scholar, quiet, studious, and his wit had wisdom in it that reached far beyond the range of party warfare. He was no companion for dissolute men whom he could see through; and they had no desire for his companionship. Discouraged by neglect, Butler let fourteen years slip by before he produced, in 1678, the Third Part of Hudibras, and two years after this he died, poor and neglected, on September 25, 1680.

The addition to the title of the First Part of Hudibras, that it was written in the time of the late Wars, is justified by internal evidence. Some portions of it certainly were written in the years 1643-5, though there must have been final revision with interpolations after 1660.

If Butler had completed "*Hudibras*" there would have been few insincerities of life untouched by its satire. Richard Baxter was a Presbyterian ; John Milton was an Independent ; Jeremy Taylor was a Churchman. Honour be to each. Yet every good cause has its *Hudibras*. Butler wrote, no doubt, as a partisan, but his whole war was against hypocrisy. Against that in every form he waged his war, though putting into the central place what he regarded as the worst hypocrisy of all. But he aimed also his shafts of wit against false show of courage ; pedantry of learning ; the false conventions of love poetry ; the worldliness of love ; pretensions of false science ; delusive aids of law. Had he completed the book, he would have left few of the shams of life untouched. To the weak side of Law and Divinity he would, no doubt, have added the weak side of Physic, when time came for summoning the Doctor to despatch his knight. An attentive reader of "*Hudibras*" will not be more impressed by its wit, than by the breadth of its plan. Good-humour gives force to its satire, and good feeling restricts it to attack upon that, which Fielding justly declared to be the only fit object of satire—*affectation, hypocrisy, whatever in any way professes to be other than it is.*

The name of his hero Butler evidently took from the paramour of the scowling Elissa in the second canto of the second book of Spenser's "*Faerie Queene*":—

" Sir Hudibras, an hardy man,  
Yet not so good of deeds as great of name,  
Which he by many rash adventures wan,  
Since errant arms to sue he first began,  
More huge in strength than wise in works he was, "  
And reason with fool hardise overran ;  
Stern Melancholy did his courage pass  
And was, for terror more, all armed in shining Brass."

H. M.

*February, 1885.*

# HUDIBRAS.



## PART I.—CANTO I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Sir Hudibras his passing worth,  
The manner how he sallied forth ;  
His arms and equipage are shown ;  
His horse's virtues, and his own.  
Th' adventure of the bear and fiddle  
Is sung, but breaks off in the middle.

WHEN civil fury first grew high,  
And men fell out, they knew not why ;  
When hard words jealousies, and fears,  
Set folks together by the ears,  
And made them fight, like mad or drunk,  
For Dame Religion, as for punk ;  
Whose honesty they all durst swear for,  
Though not a man of them knew wherefore :  
When Gospel-Trumpeter, surrounded  
With long-eared rout, to battle sounded,  
And pulpit, drum ecclesiastic,  
Was beat with fist, instead of a stick ;  
Then did Sir Knight abandon dwelling,  
And out he rode a colonelling.

A wight he was, whose very sight would  
Entitle him Mirror of Knighthood ;  
That never bent his stubborn knee  
To any thing but Chivalry ;  
Nor put up blow, but that which laid  
Right worshipful on shoulder-blade :



Chief of domestic knights and errant,  
Either for cartel or for warrant ;  
Great on the bench, great in the saddle,  
That could as well bind o'er, as swaddle ;  
Mighty he was at both of these,  
And styled of war, as well as peace.  
So some rats, of amphibious nature,  
Are either for the land or water.  
But here our authors make a doubt  
Whether he were more wise, or stout :  
Some hold the one, and some the other ;  
But howsoe'er they make a pother,  
The difference was so small, his brain  
Outweighed his rage but half a grain ;  
Which made some take him for a tool  
That knaves do work with, called a fool :  
For 't has been held by many, that  
As Montaigne, playing with his cat,  
Complains she thought him but an ass,  
Much more she would Sir Hudibras ;  
For that's the name our valiant knight  
To all his challenges did write. •  
But they're mistaken very much,  
'Tis plain enough he was not such ;  
We grant, although he had much wit,  
H' was very shy of using it ;  
As being loth to wear it out,  
And therefore bore it not about,  
Unless on holy-days, or so,  
As men their best apparel do.  
Beside, 'tis known he could speak Greek  
As naturally as pigs squeak ;  
That Latin was no more difficile,  
'Than to a blackbird 'tis to whistle :  
Being rich in both, he never scanted  
His bounty unto such as wanted ;  
But much of either would afford  
To many, that had not one word.  
For Hebrew roots, although they're found  
To flourish most in barren ground,  
He had such plenty, as sufficed  
To make some think him circumcised ;

And truly so, perhaps, he was,  
'Tis many a pious Christian's case.

He was in logic a great critic,  
Profoundly skilled in analytic ;  
He could distinguish, and divide  
A hair 'twixt south, and south-west side ;  
On either which he would dispute.  
Confute, change hands, and still confute ;  
He'd undertake to prove, by force  
Of argument, a man's no horse ;  
He'd prove a buzzard is no fowl,  
And that a lord may be an owl,  
A calf an alderman, a goose a justice,  
And rooks Committee-men and Trustees.  
He'd run in debt by disputation,  
And pay with ratiocination.

All this by syllogism, true  
In mood and figure, he would do.

For rhetoric, he could not ope  
His mouth, but out there flew a trope ;  
And when he happened to break off  
I' th' middle of his speech, or cough,  
H' had hard words ready to show why,  
And tell what rules he did it by ;  
Else, when with greatest art he spoke,  
You'd think he talked like other folk.  
For all a rhetorician's rules  
Teach nothing but to name his tools.  
But, when he pleased to show't, his speech  
In loftiness of sound was rich ;  
A Babylonish dialect,  
Which learnèd pedants much affect.  
It was a parti-coloured dress  
Of patched and piebald languages ;  
'Twas English cut on Greek and Latin,  
Like fustian heretofore on satin ;  
It had an old promiscuous tone  
As if h' had talkèd three parts in one ;  
Which made some think, when he did gabble,  
'Th' had heard three labourers of Babel ;  
Or Cerberus himself pronounce  
A leash of languages at once,

This he as volubly would vent  
 As if his stock would ne'er be spent :  
 And truly, to support that charge,  
 He had supplies as vast and large ;  
 For he could coin, or counterfeit  
 New words, with little or no wit ;  
 Words so debased and hard, no stone  
 Was hard enough to touch them on ;  
 And when with hasty noise he spoke 'em ;  
 The ignorant for current took 'em ;  
 That had the orator, who once  
 Did fill his mouth with pebble stones  
 When he harangued, but known his phrase,  
 He would have used no other ways.

In mathematics he was greater  
 Than Tycho Brahe, or Erra Pater :  
 For he, by geometric scale,  
 Could take the size of pots of ale ;  
 Resolve, by sines and tangents straight,  
 If bread or butter wanted weight ;  
 And wisely tell what hour o' th' day  
 The clock does strike, by Algebra.

Beside, he was a shrewd philosopher,  
 And had read ev'ry text and gloss over ;  
 Whate'er the crabbed'st author hath,  
 He understood b' implicit faith :  
 Whatever sceptic could inquire for,  
 For ev'ry why he had a wherefore ;  
 Knew more than forty of them do,  
 As far as words and terms could go.  
 All which he understood by rote, 't  
 And, as occasion served, would quote ;  
 No matter whether right or wrong,  
 They might be either said or sung.  
 His notions fitted things so well,  
 That which was which he could not tell ;  
 But oftentimes mistook the one  
 For th' other, as great clerks have done.  
 He could reduce all things to acts,  
 And knew their natures by abstractions ;  
 Where entity and quiddity,  
 The ghost of defunct bodies fly ;

Where truth in person does appear,  
Like words congealed in northern air.  
He knew what's what, and that's as high  
As metaphysic wit can fly.  
In school-divinity as able  
As he that hight Irrefragable ;  
A second Thomas, or, at once  
To name them all, another Duns ;  
Profound in all the Nominal  
And Real ways, beyond them all :  
And, with as delicate a hand,  
Could twist as tough a rope of sand ;  
And weave fine cobwebs, fit for skull  
That's empty when the moon is full ;  
Such as take lodgings in a head  
That's to be let unfurnishèd.  
He could raise scruples dark and nice,  
And after solve 'em in a trice ;  
As if Divinity had caught  
The itch, on purpose to be scratched ;  
Or, like a mountebank, did wound  
And stab herself with doubts profound,  
Only to show with how small pain  
The sores of Faith are cured again ;  
Although by woful proof we find,  
They always leave a scar behind.  
He knew the seat of Paradise,  
Could tell in what degree it lies ;  
And, as he was disposed, could prove it,  
Below the moon, or else above it :  
What Adam dreamt of, when his bride  
Came from her closet in his side :  
Whether the devil tempted her  
By an High Dutch interpreter ;  
If either of them had a navel :  
Who first made music malleable :  
Whether the serpent, at the fall,  
Had cloven feet, or none at all.  
All this, without a gloss, or comment,  
He could unriddle in a moment,  
In proper terms, such as men smatter  
When they throw out, and miss the matter.

For his Religion, it was fit  
To match his learning and his wit ;  
'Twas Presbyterian, true blue ;  
For he was of that stubborn crew  
Of errant saints, whom all men grant  
To be the true Church Militant ;  
Such as do build their faith upon  
The holy text of pike and gun ;  
Decide all controversies by  
Infallible artillery ;  
And prove their doctrine orthodox  
By apostolic blows, and knocks ;  
Call fire, and sword, and desolation,  
A godly, thorough Reformation,  
Which always must be carried on,  
And still be doing, never done ;  
As if Religion were intended  
For nothing else but to be mended.  
A sect, whose chief devotion lies  
In odd perverse antipathies ;  
In falling out with that or this,  
And finding somewhat still amiss ;  
More peevish, cross, and splenetic,  
Than dog distract or monkey sick.  
That with more care keep holy-day  
The wrong, than others the right way ;  
Compound for sins they are inclined to,  
By damning those they have no mind to :  
Still so perverse and opposite,  
As if they worshipped God for spite.  
The self-same thing they will abhor  
One way, and long another for.  
Free-will they one way disavow,  
Another, nothing else allow.  
All piety consists therein  
In there, in other men all sin.  
Rather than fail, they will defy  
That which they love most tenderly ,  
Quarrel with minced-pies, and disparage  
Their best and dearest friend—plum-porridge ;  
Fat pig and goose itself oppose,  
And blaspheme custard through the nose.

Th' apostles of this fierce religion,  
Like Mahomet's, were ass and widgeon,  
To whom our knight, by fast instinct  
Of wit and temper, was so linked,  
As if hypocrisy and nonsense  
Had got the advowson of his conscience.

Thus was he gifted and accoutered,  
We mean on th' inside, not the outward :  
That next of all we shall discuss ;  
Then listen, Sirs, it follows thus :  
His tawny beard was th' equal grace  
Both of his wisdom and his face ;  
In cut and die so like a tile,  
A sudden view it would beguile ;  
The upper part whereof was whey,  
The nether orange, mixed with grey.  
This hairy meteor did denounce  
The fall of sceptres and of crowns ;  
With grisly type did represent  
Declining age of government,  
And tell, with hieroglyphic spade,  
Its own grave and the state's were made.  
Like Samson's heart-breakers, it grew  
In time to make a nation rue ;  
Though it contributed its own fall,  
To wait upon the public downfall :  
It was canonic, and did grow  
In holy orders by strict vow ;  
Of rule as sullen and severe  
As that of rigid Cordeliere :  
'Twas bound to suffer persecution  
And martyrdom with resolution ;  
'T' oppose itself against the hate  
And vengeance of th' incensèd state,  
In whose defiance it was worn,  
Still ready to be pulled and torn,  
With red-hot irons to be tortured,  
Reviled, and spit upon, and martyred :  
Maugre all which, 'twas to stand fast,  
As long as monarchy should last ;  
But when the state should hap to reel,  
'Twas to submit to fatal steel,

And fall, as it was consecrate,  
 A sacrifice to fall of state,  
 Whose thread of life the fatal sisters  
 Did twist together with its whiskers,  
 And twine so close, that time should never,  
 In life or death, their fortunes sever ;  
 But with his rusty sickle mow  
 Both down together at a blow.  
 So learned Taliacotius, from  
 The brawny part of porter's bum,  
 Cut supplemental noses, which  
 Would last as long as parent breech :  
 But when the date of Nock was out,  
 Off dropped the sympathetic snout.

His back, or rather burthen, showed  
 As if it stooped with its own load :  
 For as Æneas bore his sire  
 Upon his shoulders through the fire,  
 Our knight did bear no less a pack  
 Of his own buttocks on his back ;  
 Which now had almost got the upper-  
 Hand of his head, for want of crupper.  
 To poise this equally, he bore  
 A paunch of the same bulk before,  
 Which still he had a special care  
 To keep well-crammed with thrifty fare ;  
 As white-pot, butter-milk, and curds,  
 Such as a country-house affords ;  
 With other victual, which anon  
 We farther shall dilate upon,  
 When of his hose we come to treat,  
 The cupboard where he kept his meat.

His doublet was of sturdy buff,  
 And though not sword, yet cudgel-proof,  
 Whereby 'twas fitter for his use,  
 Who feared no blows but such as bruise.

His breeches was of rugged woollen,  
 And had been at the siege of Bullen ;  
 To old King Harry so well known,  
 Some writers held they were his own.  
 Through they were lined with many a piece  
 Of ammunition bread and cheese,

And fat black-puddings, proper food  
For warriors that delight in blood :  
For, as we said, he always chose  
To carry victual in his hose,  
That often tempted rats and mice  
The ammunition to surprise ;  
And when he put a hand but in  
The one or t' other magazine,  
They stoutly on defence on't stood,  
And from the wounded foe drew blood ;  
And till th' were stormed and beaten out,  
Ne'er left the fortified redoubt ;  
And though knights errant, as some think,  
Of old did neither eat nor drink,  
Because when thorough deserts vast,  
And regions desolate, they passed  
Where belly-timber above ground,  
Or under, was not to be found,  
Unless they grazed, there's not one word  
Of their provision on record ;  
Which made some confidently write,  
They had no stomachs but to fight.  
'Tis false ; for Arthur wore in hall  
Round table like a farthingale,  
On which, with shirt pulled out behind,  
And eke before, his good knights dined.  
Though 'twas no table some suppose  
But a hugh pair of round trunk hose,  
In which he carried as much meat,  
As he and all the knights could eat,  
When laying by their swords and truncheons,  
They took their breakfasts, or their nunchions.  
But let that pass at present, lest  
We should forget where we digressed ;  
As learned authors use, to whom  
We leave it, and to th' purpose come.  
His puissant sword unto his side,  
Near his undaunted heart, was tied,  
With basket-hilt, that would hold broth,  
And serve for fight and dinner both.  
In it he melted lead for bullets,  
To shoot at foes, and sometimes pullets ;



To whom he bore so fell a grutch,  
He ne'er gave quarter t' any such.  
The trenchant blade, Toledo trusty,  
For want of fighting was grown rusty,  
And ate into itself, for lack  
Of some body to hew and hack.  
The peaceful scabbard where it dwelt,  
The rancour of its edge had felt ;  
For of the lower end two handful  
It had devoured, 'twas so manful,  
And so much scorned to lurk in case,  
As if it durst not show its face.  
In many desperate attempts,  
Of warrants, exigents, contempts,  
It had appeared with courage bolder  
Than Sergeant Bum invading shoulder ;  
Oft had it ta'en possession,  
And prisoners too, or made them run.

This sword a dagger had, his page,  
That was but little for his age :  
And therefore waited on him so,  
As dwarfs upon knights errant do.  
It was a serviceable dudgeon,  
Either for fighting or for drudging :  
When it had stabbed, or broke a head,  
It would scrape trenchers, or chip bread,  
Toast cheese or bacon, though it were  
To bait a mouse-trap, 'twould not care :  
'Twould make clean shoes, and in the earth  
Set leeks and onions, and so forth :  
It had been 'prentice to a brewer,  
Where this, and more, it did endure ;  
But left the trade, as many more  
Have lately done, on the same score.

In th' holsters, at his saddle-bow,  
Two aged pistols he did stow,  
Among the surplus of such meat  
As in his hose he could not get.  
These would inveigle rats with th' scent,  
To forage when the cocks were bent ;  
And sometimes catch 'em with a snap,  
As cleverly as th' ablest trap.

They were upon hard duty still,  
And ev'ry night stood sentinel,  
To guard the magazine i' th' hose,  
From two-legged, and from four-legged foes.

Thus clad and fortified, Sir Knight,  
From peaceful home, set forth to fight.  
But first, with nimble active force,  
He got on th' outside of his horse :  
For having but one stirrup tied  
T' his saddle on the further side,  
It was so short, h' had much ado  
To reach it with his desperate toe.  
But after many strains and heaves,  
He got up to the saddle-eaves,  
From whence he vaulted into th' seat,  
With so much vigour, strength, and heat,  
That he had almost tumbled over  
With his own weight, but did recover,  
By laying hold on tail and mane,  
Which oft he used instead of rein.

But now we talk of mounting steed,  
Before we further do proceed,  
It doth behove us to say something  
Of that which bore our valiant bumpkin.  
The beast was sturdy, large, and tall,  
With mouth of meal, and eyes of wall ;  
I would say eye, for h' had but one,  
As most agree, though some say none.  
He was well stayed, and in his gait,  
Preserved a grave, majestic state ;  
At spur or switch no more he skipped,  
Or mended pace, than Spaniard whipped ;  
And yet so fiery, he would bound  
As if he grieved to touch the ground ;  
That Cæsar's horse, who, as fame goes,  
Had corns upon his feet and toes,  
Was not by half so tender-hoofed,  
Nor trod upon the ground so soft ;  
And as that beast would kneel and stoop,  
Some write, to take his rider up,  
So Hudibras his, 'tis well-known,  
Would often do, to set him down,

We shall not need to say what lack  
Of leather was upon his back ;  
For that was hidden under pad,  
And breech of knight galled full as bad.  
His strutting ribs on both sides showed  
Like furrows he himself had ploughed ;  
For underneath the skirt of pannel,  
'Twixt ev'ry two there was a channel.  
His draggling tail hung in the dirt,  
Which on his rider he would flurt,  
Still as his tender side he pricked,  
With armed heel, or with unarmed, kicked ;  
For Hudibras wore but one spur,  
As wisely knowing, could he stir  
To active trot one side of 's horse,  
The other would not stay his course.

A Squire he had, whose name was Ralph,  
That in th' adventure went his half.  
Though writers, for more stately tone,  
Do call him Ralpho, 'tis all one ;  
And when we can, with metre safe,  
We'll call him so, if not, plain Ralph ;  
For rhyme the rudder is of verses,  
With which, like ships, they steer their courses.  
An equal stock of wit and valour  
He had laid in ; by birth a tailor ;  
The mighty Tyrian queen that gained,  
With subtle shreds, a tract of land,  
Did leave it, with a castle fair,  
To his great ancestor, her heir ;  
From him descended cross-legged knights,  
Famed for their faith and warlike fights  
Against the bloody Cannibal,  
Whom they destroyed both great and small.  
This sturdy Squire had, as well  
As the bold Trojan knight, seen hell,  
Not with a counterfeited pass  
Of golden bough, but true gold-lace.  
His knowledge was not far behind  
The knight's, but of another kind,  
And he another way came by 't ;  
Some call it Gifts, and some New-light ;

A liberal art that costs no pains  
Of study, industry, or brains.  
His wits were sent him for a token,  
But in the carriage cracked and broken ;  
Like commendation nine-pence crooked  
With—To and from my love—it looked.  
He ne'er considered it, as loth  
To look a gift-horse in the mouth ;  
And very wisely would lay forth  
No more upon it than 'twas worth :  
But as he got it freely, so  
He spent it frank and freely too :  
For saints themselves will sometimes be,  
Of gifts that cost them nothing, free.  
By means of this, with hem and cough,  
Prolongers to enlighten snuff,  
He could deep mysteries unriddle,  
As easily as thread a needle :  
For as of vagabonds we say,  
That they are ne'er beside their way :  
Whate'er men speak by this new light,  
Still they are sure to be i' th' right.  
'Tis a dark-lantern of the spirit,  
Which none can see but those that bear it ;  
A light that falls down from on high,  
For spiritual trades to cozen by ;  
An *ignis fatuus*, that bewitches,  
And leads men into pools and ditches,  
'To make them dip themselves, and sound  
For Christendom in dirty pond ;  
To dive, like wild-fowl, for salvation,  
And fish to catch regeneration.  
This light inspires, and plays upon  
The nose of saint, like bag-pipe drone,  
And speaks, through hollow empty soul,  
As through a trunk, or whispering hole,  
Such language as no mortal ear  
But spirit'al eaves-dropper can hear.  
So Phœbus, or some friendly muse,  
Into small poets song infuse ;  
Which they at second-hand rehearse,  
Through reed or bagpipe, verse for verse.

Thus Ralph became infallible,  
As three or four-legged oracle,  
The ancient cup, or modern chair ;  
Spoke truth point-blank, though unaware.  
For mystic learning wondrous able  
In magic, talisman, and cabal,  
Whose primitive tradition reaches  
As far as Adam's first green breeches ;  
Deep-sighted in intelligences,  
Ideas, atoms, influences,  
And much of *Terra Incognita*,  
Th' intelligible world, could say ;  
A deep occult philosopher,  
As learned as the wild Irish are,  
Or Sir Agrippa, for profound  
And solid lying much renowned :  
He Anthroposophus, and Floud,  
And Jacob Behmen, understood ;  
Knew many an amulet and charm,  
That would do neither good nor harm ;  
In Rosicrucian lore as learned,  
As he that *Verè adeptus* earned :  
He understood the speech of birds  
As well as they themselves do words ;  
Could tell what subtlest parrots mean,  
That speak and think contràry clean ;  
What member 'tis of whom they talk,  
When they cry, 'Rope,' and 'Walk, knave, walk.  
He'd extract numbers out of matter,  
And keep them in a glass, like water,  
Of sovereign power to make men wise ;  
For, dropped in blear thick-sighted eyes,  
They'd make them see in darkest night,  
Like owls, though purblind in the light.  
By help of these, as he professed,  
He had First Matter seen undressed :  
He took her naked, all alone,  
Before one rag of form was on.  
The Chaos, too, he had descried,  
And seen quite through, or else he lied ;  
Not that of pasteboard, which men 'show  
For groats, at fair of Barthol'mew,

But its great grandsire, first o' th' name,  
Whence that and Reformation came,  
Both cousin-germans, and right able  
T' inveigle and draw in the rabble :  
But Reformation was, some say,  
O' th' younger house to puppet-play.  
He could foretel what's ever was,  
By consequence, to come to pass :  
As death of great men, alterations,  
• Diseases, battles, inundations :  
All this without th' eclipse of th' sun,  
Or dreadful comet, he hath done  
By inward light, a way as good,  
And easy to be understood :  
But with more lucky hit than those  
That use to make the stars depose,  
Like Knights o' th' Post, and falsely charge  
Upon themselves what others forge ;  
As if they were consenting to  
All mischiefs in the world men do :  
Or, like the devil, did tempt and sway 'em  
To rogueries, and then betray 'em.  
They'll search a planet's house, to know  
Who broke and robbed a house below ;  
Examine Venus and the Moon,  
Who stole a thimble or a spoon ;  
And though they nothing will confess,  
Yet by their very looks can guess,  
And tell what guilty aspect bodes,  
Who stole, and who received the goods :  
They'll question Mars, and, by his look,  
Detect who 'twas that nimmed a cloak ;  
• Make Mercury confess, and 'peach  
Those thieves which he himself did teach.  
They'll find, i' th' physiognomies  
O' th' planets, all men's destinies ;  
Like him that took the doctor's bill,  
And swallowed it instead o' th' pill,  
Cast the nativity o' th' question,  
And from positions to be guessed on,  
As sure as if they knew the moment  
Of native's birth, tell what will come on't.

They'll feel the pulses of the stars,  
 To find out agues, coughs, catarrhs ;  
 And tell what crisis does divine  
 The rot in sheep, or mange in swine ;  
 What gains, or loses, hangs, or saves,  
 What makes men great, what fools, or knaves ;  
 But not what wise, for only 'f those  
 The stars, they say, cannot dispose,  
 No more than can the astrologians :  
 There they say right, and like true Trojans.  
 This Ralpho knew, and therefore took  
 The other course, of which we spoke.

Thus was th' accomplished Squire endued  
 With gifts and knowledge per'lous shrewd.  
 Never did trusty squire with knight,  
 Or knight with squire, e'er jump more right.  
 Their arms and equipage did fit,  
 As well as virtues, parts, and wit :  
 Their valours, too, were of a rate,  
 And out they sallied at the gate,

Few miles on horseback had they joggèd  
 But Fortune unto them turned deggèd ;  
 For they a sad adventure met,  
 Of which anon we mean to treat.  
 But ere we venture to unfold  
 Achievements so resolved, and bold,  
 We should, as learnèd poets use,  
 Invoke th' assistance of some muse ;  
 However critics count it sillier,  
 Than jugglers talking t' a familiar ;  
 We think 'tis no great matter which,  
 They're all alike, yet we shall pitch  
 On one that fits our purpose most,  
 Whom therefore thus do we accost :—

Thou that with ale, or viler liquors,  
 Didst inspire Withers, Prynne, and Vickars,  
 And force them, though it was in spite  
 Of Nature, and their stars, to write ;  
 Who, as we find in sullen writs,  
 And cross-grained works of modern wits,  
 With vanity, opinion, want,  
 The wonder of the ignorant,

The praises of the author, penned  
By himself, or wit-insuring friend ;  
The itch of picture in the front,  
With bays, and wicked rhyme upon 't,  
All that is left o' th' forked hill  
To make men scribble without skill ;  
Canst make a poet, spite of fate,  
And teach all people to translate,—  
Though out of languages, in which  
They understand no part of speech ;  
Assist me but this once, I 'mplore,  
And I shall trouble thee no more.

In western clime there is a town,  
'To those that dwell therein well known,  
'Therefore there needs no more be said here,  
We unto them refer our reader ;  
For brevity is very good,  
When w' are, or are not understood.  
'To this town people did repair  
On days of market, or of fair,  
And to cracked fiddle, and hoarse tabor,  
In merriment did drudge and labour :  
But now a sport more formidable  
Had raked together village rabble ;  
'Twas an old way of recreating,  
Which learned butchers call bear-baiting ;  
A bold adventurous exercise,  
With ancient heroes in high prize ;  
For authors do affirm it came  
From Isthmian and Nemæan game :  
Others derive it from the Bear  
That's fixed in northern hemisphere,  
And round about the pole does make  
A circle, like a bear at stake,  
That at the chain's end wheels about,  
And overturns the rabble-rout :  
For after solemn proclamation  
In the bear's name, as is the fashion,  
According to the law of arms,  
To keep men from inglorious harms,  
That none presume to come so near  
As forty foot of stake of bear ;



If any yet be so fool-hardy,  
 T' expose themselves to vain jeopàrdy,  
 If they come wounded off, and lame,  
 No honour's got by such a maim,  
 Although the bear gain much, b'ing bound  
 In honour to make good his ground,  
 When he's engaged, and takes no notice,  
 If any press upon him, who 'tis,  
 But lets them know, at their own cost,  
 That he intends to keep his post.  
 This to prevent, and other harms,  
 Which always wait on feats of arms,  
 For in the hurry of a fray  
 'Tis hard to keep out of harm's way,  
 Thither the Knight his course did steer,  
 To keep the peace 'twixt dog and bear,  
 As he believed he was bound to do  
 In conscience and commission too;  
 And therefore thus bespoke the Squire :—

' We that are wisely mounted higher  
 Than constables in curule wit,  
 When on tribunal bench we sit, •  
 Like speculators, should foresee,  
 From Pharos of authority,  
 Portended mischiefs farther than  
 Low proletarian tything-men ;  
 And, therefore, being informed by bruit,  
 That dog and bear are to dispute,—  
 For so of late men fighting name,  
 Because they often prove the same ;  
 For where the first does hap to be, ,  
 The last does *coincidere* ;—

*Quantum in nobis*, have thought good  
 'To save th' expense of Christian blood,  
 And try if we, by mediation  
 Of treaty, and accommodation,  
 Can end the quarrel, and compose  
 The bloody duel without blows.

' Are not our liberties, our lives,  
 The laws, religion, and our wives,  
 Enough at once to lie at stake  
 For Cov'nant, and the Cause's sake ?

But in that quarrel dogs and bears,  
As well as we, must venture theirs ?  
This feud, by Jesuits invented,  
By evil counsel is fomented ;  
There is a Machiavelian plot,  
Though every nare olfact it not,  
And deep design in't to divide  
The well-affected that confide,  
By setting brother against brother,  
To claw and curry one another.  
Have we not enemies *plus satis*,  
That *cane et angue pejus* hate us ?  
And shall we turn our fangs and claws  
Upon our own selves, without cause ?  
That some occult design doth lie  
In bloody cynarctomachy,  
Is plain enough to him that knows  
How saints lead brothers by the nose.  
I wish myself a pseudo-prophet,  
But sure some mischief will come of it,  
Unless by providential wit,  
Or force, we averruncate it.  
For what design, what interest,  
Can beast have to encounter beast ?  
They fight for no espoused cause,  
Frail privilege, fundamental laws,  
Nor for a thorough reformation,  
Nor covenant nor protestation,  
Nor liberty of consciences,  
Nor lords and commons' ordinances ;  
Nor for the church, nor for church-lands,  
To get them in their own no hands ;  
Nor evil counsellors to bring  
To justice, that seduce the king ;  
Nor for the worship of us men,  
Though we have done as much for them.  
Th' Egyptians worshipped dogs, and for  
Their faith made internecine war.  
Others adored a rat, and some  
For that church suffered martyrdom.  
The Indians fought for the truth  
Of th' elephant and monkey's tooth ;

And many, to defend that faith,  
 Fought it out *mordicus* to death.  
 But no beast ever was so slight,  
 For man, as for his god, to fight ;  
 They have more wit, alas ! and know  
 Themselves and us better than so.  
 But we, who only do infuse  
 The rage in them like *boutè-fcus*,  
 'Tis our example that instils  
 In them th' infection of our ills.  
 And so, by our example, cattle  
 Learn to give one another battle.  
 We read in Nero's time, the Heathen  
 When they destroyed the Christian brethren,  
 They sewed them in the skins of bears,  
 And then set dogs about their ears ;  
 From whence, no doubt, th' invention came  
 Of this lewd antichristian game.'

To this, quoth Ralpho,—' Verily  
 The point seems very plain to me ;  
 It is an antichristian game,  
 Unlawful both in thing and name.  
 First, for the name ; the word bear-baiting  
 Is carnal, and of man's creating ;  
 For certainly there's no such word  
 In all the Scripture on record ;  
 Therefore unlawful, and a sin ;  
 And so is, secondly, the thing :  
 A vile assembly 'tis, that can  
 No more be proved by Scripture, than  
 Provincial, classic, national ;  
 Mere human creature-cobwebs all. •  
 Thirdly, it is idolatrous ;  
 For when men run a-whoring thus  
 With their inventions, whatsoc'er  
 The thing be, whether dog or bear,  
 It is idolatrous and pagan,  
 No less than worshipping of Dagon.'

Quoth Hudibras,—' I smell a rat ;  
 Ralpho, thou dost prevaricate :  
 For though the thesis which thou lay'st  
 Be true *ad amussim*, as thou say'st ;

For that bear-baiting should appear,  
*Jure divino*, lawfuller  
Than synods are, thou dost deny  
*Totidem verbis*—so do I;  
Yet there's a fallacy in this;  
For if by sly *homæosis*,  
Thou wouldst sophistically imply  
Both are unlawful—I deny.'

'And I,' quoth Ralpho, 'do not doubt  
But bear-baiting may be made out,  
In gospel times, as lawful as is  
Provincial, or parochial classis;  
And that both are so near of kin,  
And like in all, as well as sin,  
That, put 'em in a bag, and shake 'em,  
Yourself o' th' sudden would mistake 'em,  
And not know which is which, unless  
You measure by their wickedness;  
For 'tis not hard t' imagine whether  
O' th' two is worst, tho' I name neither.'

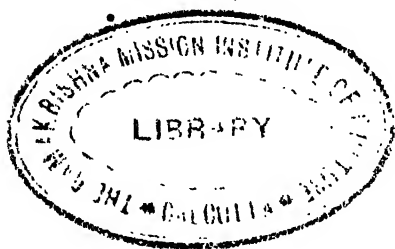
Quoth Hudibras,—'Thou offer'st much,  
But art not able to keep touch.  
*Mira de lenle*, as 'tis i' th' adage,  
*Id est*, to make a leek a cabbage;  
Thou canst at best but overstrain  
A paradox, and thy own brain;  
For what can synods have at all  
With bear that's analogical?  
Or what relation has debating  
Of church-affairs with bear-baiting?  
A just comparison still is  
Of things *ejusdem generis*:  
And then what *genus* rightly doth  
Include, and comprehend them both?  
If animal, both of us may  
As justly pass for bears as they;  
For we are animals no less,  
Although of different specieses.  
But, Ralpho, this is no fit place,  
Nor time, to argue out the case:  
For now the field is not far off,  
Where we must give the world a proof

Of deeds, not words, and such as suit  
Another manner of dispute :  
A controversy that affords  
Actions for arguments, not words ;  
Which we must manage at a rate  
Of prow'ss, and conduct adequate  
To what our place, and fame doth promise,  
And all the godly expect from us.  
Nor shall they be deceived, unless  
We're slurred and outed by success ;  
Success, the mark no mortal wit,  
Or surest hand can always hit :  
For whatsoe'er we perpetrate,  
We do but row, w' are steered by fate,  
Which in success oft disinherits,  
For spurious causes, noblest merits.  
Great actions are not always true sons  
Of great and mighty resolutions ;  
Nor do the bold'st attempts bring forth  
Events still equal to their worth ;  
But sometimes fail, and in their stead  
Fortune and cowardice succeed.  
Yet we have no great cause to doubt,  
Our actions still have borne us out ;  
Which, though they're known to be so ample,  
We need not copy from example ;  
We're not the only person durst  
Attempt this province, nor the first.  
In northern clime a val'rous knight  
Did whilom kill his bear in fight,  
And wound a fiddler : we have both  
Of these the objects of our wroth, .  
And equal fame and glory from  
Th' attempt, or victory to come.  
'Tis sung, there is a valiant Mamaluke  
In a foreign land, yclep'd ———  
To whom we have been oft compared  
For person, parts, address, and beard ;  
Both equally reputed stout,  
And in the same cause both have fought ;  
He oft, in such attempts as these,  
Came off with glory and success ;

Nor will we fail in th' execution,  
For want of equal resolution.  
Honour is, like a widow, won  
With brisk attempt and putting on ;  
With entering manfully and urging,  
Not slow approaches, like a virgin.'

This said, as erst the Phrygian knight.

- So ours, with rusty steel did smite  
His Trojan horse, and just as much  
• He mended pace upon the touch ;  
But from his empty stomach groaned,  
Just as that hollow beast did sound,  
And angry, answered from behind,  
With brandished tail and blast of wind.  
So have I seen, with armèd heel,  
A wight bestride a Common-weal,  
While still the more he kicked and spurred,  
The less the sullen jade has stirred.



## CANTO II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The catalogue and character  
Of th' enemies' best men of war,  
Whom, in a bold harangue, the knight  
Defies and challenges to fight :  
H' encounters Talgol, routs the bear,  
And takes the fiddler prisoner,  
Conveys him to enchanted castle,  
There shuts him fast in wooden Bastile.

THERE was an ancient sage philosopher  
That had read Alexander Ross over,  
And swore the world, as he could prove,  
Was made of fighting, and of love.  
Just so romances are, for what else  
Is in them all but love and battles ?  
O' th' first of these w' have no great matter  
To treat of, but a world o' th' latter,  
In which to do the injured right,  
We mean in what concerns just fight,  
*Certes* our authors are to blame,  
For to make some well-sounding name  
A pattern fit for modern knights  
To copy out in frays and fights,  
Like those that a whole street do raze,  
To build a palace in the place ;  
They never care how many others  
They kill, without regard of mothers,  
Or wives, or children, so they can  
Make up some fierce, dead-doing man,  
Composed of many ingredient valours,  
Just like the manhood of nine tailors :  
So a wild Tartar, when he spies  
A man that's handsome, valiant, wise,  
If he can kill him, thinks t' inherit  
His wit, his beauty, and his spirit ;

As if just so much he enjoyed,  
As in another is destroyed :  
For when a giant's slain in fight,  
And mowed o'erthwart, or cleft downright,  
It is a heavy case, no doubt,  
A man should have his brains beat out,  
Because he's tall, and has large bones,  
As men kill beavers for their stones.  
But, as for our part, we shall tell  
The naked truth of what befel,  
And as an equal friend to both  
The knight and bear, but more to troth,  
With neither faction shall take part,  
But give to each his due desert,  
And never coin a formal lie on't,  
To make the knight o'ercome the giant.  
This b'ing professed, we've hopes enough,  
And now go on where we left off.

They rode, but authors having not  
Determined whether pace or trot,  
That is to say, whether tollutation,  
As they do term 't, or succussation,  
We leave it, and go on, as now  
Suppose they did, no matter how ;  
Yet some, from subtle hints, have got  
Mysterious light it was a trot :  
But let that pass ; they now begun  
To spur their living engines on :  
For as whipped tops and bandied balls,  
The learned hold, are animals ;  
So horses they affirm to be  
Mere engines made by geometry,  
And were invented first from engines,  
As Indian Britons were from Penguins.  
So let them be, and, as I was saying,  
They their live engines plied, not staying  
Until they reached the fatal champaign  
Which th' enemy did then encamp on ;  
The dire Pharsalian plain, where battle  
Was to be waged 'twixt puissant cattle,  
And fierce auxiliary men,  
That came to aid their brethren ;



Who now began to take the field,  
As knight from ridge of steel beheld.  
For, as our modern wits behold,  
Mounted a pick-back on the old,  
Much further off, much further he  
Raised on his agèd beast, could see ;  
Yet not sufficient to descry  
All postures of the enemy ;  
Wherefore he bids the squire ride further,  
T' observe their numbers, and their order ;  
That when their motions he had known,  
He might know how to fit his own.  
Meanwhile he stopped his willing steed,  
To fit himself for martial deed :  
Both kinds of metal he prepared,  
Either to give blows, or to ward ;  
Courage within, and steel without,  
To give and to receive a rout.  
His death-charged pistols he did fit well,  
Drawn out from life-preserving victual ;  
These being primed, with force he laboured  
To free 's blade from retentive scabbard ;  
And after many a painful pluck,  
He cleared at length the rugged tuck :  
Then shook himself, to see that prowess  
In scabbard of his arms sat loose ;  
And, raised upon his desperate foot,  
On stirrup-side he gazed about,  
Portending blood, like blazing star,  
The beacon of approaching war.  
The Squire advanced with greater speed,  
Than could be expected from his steed ;  
But far more in returning made ;  
For now the foe he had surveyed,  
Ranged, as to him they did appear,  
With van, main-battle, wings, and rear.  
In th' head of all this warlike rabble,  
Crowdero marched expert and able.  
Instead of trumpet, and of drum,  
That makes the warrior's stomach come,  
Whose noise whets valour sharp, like beer  
By thunder turned to vinegar ; •

For if a trumpet sound, or drum beat,  
Who has not a month's mind to combat ?  
A squeaking engine he applied  
Unto his neck, on north-east side,  
Just where the hangman does dispose,  
To special friends, the fatal noose :  
For 'tis great grace, when statesmen straight  
Despatch a friend, let others wait.  
His warped ear hung o'er the strings,  
Which was but souse to chitterlings :  
For guts, some write, ere they are sodden,  
Are fit for music, or for pudden ;  
From whence men borrow every kind  
Of minstrelsy, by string or wind.  
His grisly beard was long and thick,  
With which he strung his fiddle-stick ;  
For he to horse-tail scorned to owe  
For what on his own chin did grow.  
Chiron, the four-legged bard, had both  
A beard and tail of his own growth ;  
And yet by authors 'tis averred,  
He made use only of his beard.

In Staffordshire, where virtuous worth  
Does raise the minstrelsy, not birth,  
Where bulls do choose the boldest king  
And ruler o'er the men of string,  
As once in Persia, 'tis said,  
Kings were proclaimed by a horse that neighed ;  
He, bravely venturing at a crown,  
By chance of war was beaten down,  
And wounded sore : his leg, then broke,  
Had got a deputy of oak ;  
For when a shin in fight is cropped,  
The knee with one of timber's propped,  
Esteemed more honourable than the other,  
And takes place, though the younger brother

Next marched brave Orsin, famous for  
Wise conduct, and success in war ;  
A skilful leader, stout, severe,  
Now marshal to the champion bear.  
With truncheon tipped with iron head,  
The warrior to the lists he led ;

With solemn march, and stately pace,  
 But far more grave and solemn face ;  
 Grave as the Emperor of Pegu,  
 Or Spanish potentate, Don Diego ;  
 This leader was of knowledge great,  
 Either for charge, or for retreat :  
 Knew when t' engage his bear pell-mell,  
 And when to bring him off as well.  
 So lawyers, lest the bear defendant,  
 And plaintiff dog, should make an end on't,  
 Do stave and tail with writs of error,  
 Reverse of judgment, and demurrer,  
 To let them breathe a while, and then  
 Cry whoop, and set them on again.  
 As Romulus a wolf did rear,  
 So he was dry-nursed by a bear,  
 That fed him with the purchased prey  
 Of many a fierce and bloody fray ;  
 Bred up, where discipline most rare is,  
 In military garden Paris :  
 For soldiers heretofore did grow  
 In gardens, just as weeds do now,  
 Until some splay foot politicians  
 T' Apollo offered up petitions,  
 For licensing a new invention  
 They'd found out of an antique engine,  
 To root out all the weeds, that grow  
 In public gardens, at a blow,  
 And leave th' herbs standing. Quoth Sir Sun,  
 ' My friends, that is not to be done.'  
 ' Not done !' quote Statesman ; ' Yes, an't please ye,  
 When 'tis once known you'll say 'tis easy.'  
 ' Why then let's know it,' quoth Apollo :  
 ' We'll beat a drum, and they'll all follow.'  
 ' A drum !' quoth Phœbus, ' Troth, that's true,  
 A pretty invention, quaint and new :  
 But though of voice and instrument  
 We are th' undoubted president,  
 We such loud music do not profess,  
 The devil's master of that office,  
 Where it must pass ; if 't be a drum,  
 He'll sign it with *Cler. Parl. Dom. Com.* :

To him apply yourselves, and he  
Will soon despatch you for his fee.'  
They did so, but it proved so ill,  
They 'ad better let 'em grow there still.

But to resume what we discoursing  
Were on before, that is, stout Orsin ;  
That which so oft by sundry writers,  
Has been applied t' almost all fighters,  
More justly may b' ascribed to this  
Than any other warrior, *viz.*  
None ever acted both parts bolder,  
Both of a chieftain and a soldier.  
He was of great descent, and high  
For splendour and antiquity,  
And from celestial origine,  
Derived himself in a right line ;  
Not as the ancient heroes did,  
Who, that their base-births might be hid,  
Knowing they were of doubtful gender,  
And that they came in at a windore,  
Made Jupiter himself, and others  
O' th' gods, gallants to their own mothers,  
To get on them a race of champions,  
Of which old Homer first made lampoons ;  
Arctophylax, in northern sphere,  
Was his undoubted ancestor ;  
From him his great forefathers came,  
And in all ages bore his name :  
Learned he was in med'cinal lore,  
For by his side a pouch he wore,  
Replete with strange hermetic powder,  
That wou'ds nine miles point-blank wou'd solder ;  
By skilful chemists, with great cost,  
Extracted from a rotten post ;  
But of a heavenlier influence  
Than that which mouncebanks dispense ;  
Though by Promethean fire made,  
As they do quack that drive that trade.  
For this did healing, and as sure  
As that did mischief, this wou'd cure.  
Thus virtuous Orsin was endued  
With learning, conduct, fortitude

Incomparable ; and as the prince  
Of poets, Homer, sung long since,  
A skilful leech is better far,  
Than half a hundred men of war ;  
So he appeared, and by his skill,  
No less than dint of sword, could kill.

The gallant Bruin marched next him,  
With visage formidably grim,  
And rugged as a Saracen,  
Or Turk of Mahomet's own kin,  
Clad in a mantle *de la guerre*  
Of rough, impenetrable fur ;  
And in his nose, like Indian king,  
He wore, for ornament, a ring ;  
About his neck a threefold gorget.  
As rough as trebled leathern target ;  
Armèd, as heralds cant, and langued,  
Or, as the vulgar say, sharp-fanged :  
For as the teeth in beasts of prey  
Are swords, with which they fight in fray,  
So swords, in men of war, are teeth,  
Which they do eat their victual with.  
He was by birth, some authors write,  
A Russian, some a Muscovite,  
And 'mong the Cossacks had been bred,  
Of whom we in diurnals read,  
'That serve to fill up pages here,  
As with their bodies ditches there.  
Scrimansky was his cousin-german,  
With whom he served, and fed on vermin ;  
And when these failed, he'd suck his claws,  
And quarter himself upon his paws :  
And though his countrymen, the Huns,  
Did stew their meat between their bums  
And th' horses' backs o'er which they straddle,  
And ev'ry man ate up his saddle ;  
He was not half so nice as they,  
But ate it raw when 't came in's way.  
He had traced countries far and near,  
More than Le Blanc the traveller ;  
Who writes, he spoused in India,  
Of noble house, a lady gay,

And got on her a race of worthies,  
As stout as any upon earth is.  
Full many a fight for him between  
Talgol and Orsin oft had been,  
Each striving to deserve the crown  
Of a saved citizen ; the one  
To guard his bear, the other fought  
To aid his dog ; both made more stout  
•By several spurs of neighbourhood,  
Church-fellow-membership, and blood ;  
But Talgol, mortal foe to cows,  
Never got aught of him but blows ;  
Blows hard and heavy, such as he  
Had lent, repaid with usury.  
Yet Talgol was of courage stout,  
And vanquished oftener than he fought :  
Inured to labour, sweat, and toil,  
And, like a champion, shone with oil :  
Right many a widow his keen blade,  
And many fatherless, had made ;  
He many a boar and huge dun-cow  
Did, like another Guy, o'erthrow ;  
But Guy, with him in fight compared,  
Had like the boar or dun-cow fared :  
With greater troops of sheep h' had fought  
Than Ajax, or bold Don Quixote ;  
And many a serpent of fell kind,  
With wings before, and stings behind,  
Subdued ; as poets say, long ago,  
Bold Sir George Saint George did the dragon.  
Nor engine, nor device polemic,  
Disease, nor doctor epidemic,  
Though stored with deleterious medicines,  
•Which whosoever took is dead since,  
E'er sent so vast a colony  
To both the under worlds as he :  
For he was of that noble trade  
That demi-gods and heroes made,  
Slaughter, and knocking on the head,  
The trade to which they all were bred ;  
And is, like others, glorious when  
'Tis great and large, but base, if mean ;

The former rides in triumph for it,  
The latter in a two-wheeled chariot,  
For daring to profane a thing  
So sacred, with so vile bungling.

Next these the brave Magnano came,  
Magnano, great in martial fame ;  
Yet, when with Orsin he waged fight,  
'Tis sung he got but little by't :  
Yet he was fierce as forest-boar,  
Whose spoils upon his back he wore,  
As thick as Ajax' seven-fold shield,  
Which o'er his brazen arms he held ;  
But brass was feeble to resist  
The fury of his armèd fist ;  
Nor could the hardest iron hold out  
Against his blows, but they would through't.  
In magic he was deeply read,  
As he that made the brazen head ;  
Profoundly skilled in the black art,  
As English Merlin, for his heart ;  
But far more skilful in the spheres,  
Than he was at the sieve and shears.  
He could transform himself to colour,  
As like the devil as a collier ;  
As like as hypocrites, in show,  
Are to true saints, or crow to crow.  
Of warlike engines he was author,  
Devised of quick despatch of slaughter ;  
The cannon, blunderbuss, and saker,  
He was th' inventor of, and maker ;  
The trumpet and the kettle-drum  
Did both from his invention come,  
He was the first that e'er did teach  
To make, and how to stop, a breach.  
A lance he bore with iron pike,  
Th' one half would thrust, the other strike ;  
And when their forces he had joined,  
He scorned to turn his parts behind.

He Trulla loved, Trulla, more bright  
Than burnished armour of her knight ;  
A bold virago, stout, and tall,  
As Joan of France, or English Mall ;

Through perils both of wind and limb,  
Through thick and thin she followed him  
In ev'ry adventure h' undertook,  
And never him, or it forsook :  
At breach of wall, or hedge surprise,  
She shared i' th' hazard, and the prize ;  
•At beating quarters up, or forage,  
Behaved herself with matchless courage,  
And laid about in fight more busily  
Than th' Amazonian Dame Penthesile.  
And though some critics here cry Shame,  
And say our authors are to blame,  
That, spite of all philosophers,  
Who hold no females stout but bears,  
And heretofore did so abhor  
That women should pretend to war,  
They would not suffer the stout'st dame,  
To swear by Hercules's name ;  
Make feeble ladies, in their works,  
To fight like termagants and Turks ;  
To lay their native arms aside,  
Their modesty, and ride astride ;  
To run a-tilt at men, and wield  
Their naked tools in open field ;  
As stout Armida, bold 'Thalestris,  
And she that would have been the mistress  
Of Gondibert, but he had grace,  
And rather took a country lass ;  
They say 'tis false without all sense,  
But of pernicious consequence  
To government, which they suppose  
•Can never be upheld in prose ;  
Strip nature naked to the skin,  
You'll find about her no such thing.  
It may be so, yet what we tell  
Of Trulla, that's improbable,  
Shall be deposed by those have seen't,  
Or, what's as good, produced in print ;  
And if they will not take our word,  
We'll prove it true upon recòrd.  
The upright Cerdon next advanc't,  
Of all hfs race the valiant'st ;



Cerdon the Great, renowned in song,  
Like Herc'les, for repair of wrong :  
He raised the low, and fortified  
The weak against the strongest side :  
Ill has he read that never hit  
On him in muses' deathless writ.  
He had a weapon keen and fierce,  
That through a bull-hide shield would pierce,  
And cut it in a thousand pieces,  
Though tougher than the Knight of Greece his,  
With whom his black-thumbed ancestor  
Was comrade in the ten years' war :  
For when the restless Greeks sat down  
So many years before Troy town,  
And were renowned, as Homer writes.  
For well-soled boots no less than fights,  
They owed that glory only to  
His ancestor, that made them so.  
Fast friend he was to reformation,  
Until 'twas worn quite out of fashion ;  
Next rectifier of wry law,  
And would make three to cure one flaw.  
Learned he was, and could take note,  
'Transcribe, collect, translate, and quote ;  
But preaching was his chiefest talent,  
On argument, in which being valiant,  
He used to lay about and stickle,  
Like ram or bull at conventicle :  
For disputants, like rams and bulls,  
Do fight with arms that spring from skulls,  
Last Colon came, bold man of war,  
Destined to blows by fatal star ;  
Right expert in command of horse,  
But cruel, and without remorse.  
That which of Centaur long ago  
Was said, and has been wrested to  
Some other knights, was true of this :  
He and his horse were of a piece ;  
One spirit did inform them both,  
The self-same vigour, fury, wroth ;  
Yet he was much the rougher part,  
And always had a harder heart,

Although his horse had been of those  
That fed on man's flesh, as fame goes :  
Strange food for horse ! and yet, alas !  
It may be true, for flesh is grass.  
Sturdy he was, and no less able  
Than Hercules to clean a stable ;  
As great a drover, and as great  
A critic too, in hog or neat.  
He ripped the womb up of his mother,  
Dame Tellus, 'cause she wanted fother,  
And provender, wherewith to feed  
Himself and his less cruel steed.  
It was a question whether he  
Or's horse, were of a family  
More worshipful ; 'till antiquaries,  
After they'd almost pored out their eyes,  
Did very learnedly decide  
The business on the horse's side,  
And proved not only horse, but cows,  
Nay pigs, were of the elder house :  
For beasts, when man was but a piece  
Of earth himself, did th' earth possess.

These worthies were the chief that led  
The combatants each in the head  
Of his command, with arms and rage  
Ready and longing to engage.  
The numerous rabble was drawn out  
Of several counties round about,  
From villages remote, and shires,  
Of east and western hemispheres ;  
From foreign parishes and regions,  
Of different manners, speech, religions,  
Came men and mastiffs, some to fight  
For fame and honour, some for sight.  
And now the field of death, the lists,  
Were entered by antagonists,  
And blood was ready to be broached,  
When Hudibras in haste approached,  
With squire and weapons to attack 'em :  
But first thus from his horse bespake 'em.

‘What rage, O citizens ! what fury  
Doth you to these dire actions hurry ?

What cestrum, what phrenetic mood  
Makes you thus lavish of your blood,  
While the proud Vies your trophies boast,  
And, unrevenged, walks Waller's ghost?  
What towns, what garrisons might you,  
With hazard of this blood, subdue,  
Which now y' are bent to throw away  
In vain, untriumphable fray?  
Shall saints in civil bloodshed wallow  
Of saints, and let the Cause lie fallow?  
The Cause, for which we fought and swore  
So boldly, shall we now give o'er?  
Then because quarrels still are seen  
With oaths and swearings to begin,  
The solemn league and covenant  
Will seem a mere God-damme rant,  
And we that took it, and have fought,  
As lewd as drunkards that fall out:  
For as we make war for the king  
Against himself, the self-same thing  
Some will not stick to swear, we do  
For God, and for religion too;  
For if bear-baiting we allow,  
What good can reformation do?  
The blood and treasure that's laid out  
Is thrown away, and goes for nought.  
Are these the fruits o' th' protestation,  
The prototype of reformation,  
Which all the saints, and some, since martyrs,  
Wore in their hats like wedding garters,  
When 'twas resolvèd by their house  
Six members' quarrel to espouse?  
Did they for this draw down the rabble,  
With zeal, and noises formidable;  
And make all cries about the town  
Join throats to cry the bishops down?  
Who having round begirt the palace,  
As once a month they do the gallows,  
As members gave the sign about,  
Set up their throats with hideous shout.  
When tinkers bawled aloud, to settle  
Church-discipline, for patching kettle.

No sow-gelder did blow his horn  
To geld a cat, but cried Reform.  
The oyster-women locked their fish up,  
And trudged away to cry No Bishop ;  
The mouse-trap men laid save-alls by,  
And 'gainst ev'l counsellors did cry ;  
Botchers left old clothes in the lurch,  
And fell to turn and patch the church ;  
Some cried the covenant, instead  
Of pudding-pies and ginger-bread ;  
And some for brooms, old boots, and shoes,  
Bawled out to purge the Commons house ;  
Instead of kitchen-stuff, some cry  
A gospel-preaching ministry ;  
And some for old suits, coats, or cloak,  
No surplices nor service-book :  
A strange harmonious inclination  
Of all degrees to reformation.  
And is this all ? Is this the end  
To which these carr'ings on did tend ?  
Hath public faith, like a young heir,  
For this tak'n up all sorts of ware,  
And run int' every tradesman's book,  
Till both turn bankrupts, and are broke ?  
Did saints for this bring in their plate,  
And crowd, as if they came too late ?  
For when they thought the Cause had need on't,  
Happy was he that could be rid on't.  
Did they coin jordens, bowls, and flagons,  
Int' officers of horse and dragoons ;  
And into pikes and musqueteers  
Stamp beakers, cups, and porringers ?  
A thimble, bodkin, and a spoon,  
Did start up living men, as soon  
As in the furnace they were thrown,  
Just like the dragon's teeth b'ing sown.  
Then was the Cause all gold and plate,  
The brethren's offerings, consecrate,  
Like th' Hebrew calf, and down before it  
The saints fell prostrate, to adore it.  
So say the wicked—and will you  
Make that sarcasmus scandal true,

By running after dogs and bears,  
Beasts more unclean than calves or steers?  
Have powerful preachers plied their tongues,  
And laid themselves out, and their lungs;  
Used all means, both direct and sin'ster,  
I' th' pow'r of gospel-preaching min'ster?  
Have they invented tones, to win  
The women, and make them draw in  
The men, as Indians with a female  
Tame elephant inveigle the male?  
Have they told Prov'dence what it must do,  
Whom to avoid, and whom to trust to:  
Discovered th' Enemy's design,  
And which way best to countermine;  
Prescribed what ways he hath to work,  
Or it will ne'er advance the kirk?  
Told it the news o' th' last express,  
And after good or bad success  
Made prayers, not so like petitions,  
As overtures and propositions,  
Such as the army did present  
To their creator, the parliament;  
In which they freely will confess,  
They will not, cannot acquiesce,  
Unless the work be carried on  
In the same way they have begun,  
By setting church and common-weal  
All on a flame, bright as their zeal,  
On which the saints were all a-gog,  
And all this for a bear and dog?  
The parliament drew up petitions  
To 'tself, and sent them, like commissions,  
To well-affected persons, down  
In every city and great town,  
With power to levy horse and men,  
Only to bring them back again?  
For this did many, many a mile,  
Ride manfully in rank and file,  
With papers in their hats, that showed  
As if they to the pill'ry rode!  
Have all these courses, these efforts,  
Been tried by people of all sorts,

*Velis et remis, omnibus nervis,*  
And all t' advance the Cause's service,  
And shall all now be thrown away  
In petulant intestine fray?  
Shall we, that in the cov'nant swore  
Each man of us to run before  
Another still in reformation  
Give dogs and bears a dispensation?  
How will dissenting brethren relish it?  
What will malignants say? *Videlicet,*  
That each man swore to do his best,  
To damn and perjure all the rest;  
And bid the devil take the hin'most,  
Which at this race is like to win most.  
They'll say our business to reform  
The church and state, is but a worm  
For to subscribe, unsight, unseen,  
T' an unknown church's discipline,  
What is it else, but, before-hand,  
T' engage, and after understand?  
For when we swore to carry on  
The present reformation,  
According to the purest mode  
Of churches best reformed abroad,  
What did we else but make a vow  
To do, we knew not what, nor how?  
For no three of us will agree  
Where, or what churches these should be;  
And is indeed the self-same case  
With theirs that swore *et ceteras*;  
Or the French league, in which men vowed  
To fight to the last drop of blood.  
These slanders will be thrown upon  
The Cause and work we carry on,  
If we permit men to run headlong  
T' exorbitancies fit for Bedlam,  
Rather than gospel-walking times,  
When slightest sins are greatest crimes.  
But we the matter so shall handle,  
As to remove that odious scandal.  
In name of king and parliament,  
I charge ye all, no more foment

This feud, but keep the peace between  
Your brethren and your countrymen ;  
And to those places straight repair  
Where your respective dwellings are :  
But to that purpose first surrender  
The fiddler, as the prime offender,  
Th' incendiary vile, that is chief  
Author, and engineer of mischief ;  
That makes division between friends,  
For profane and malignant ends.  
He and that engine of vile noise,  
On which illegally he plays,  
Shall, *dictum factum*, both be brought  
To condign pun'shment, as they ought.  
This must be done, and I would fain see  
Mortal so sturdy as to gainsay ;  
For then I'll take another course,  
And soon reduce you all by force.'  
This said, he clapped his hand on sword,  
To show he meant to keep his word.

But Talgol, who had long suppressed  
Inflamèd wrath in glowing breast,  
Which now began to rage and burn as  
Implacably as flame in furnace,  
Thus answered him,—' Thou vermin wretched,  
As e'er in measled pork was hatched ;  
Thou tail of worship, that dost grow  
On rump of justice as of cow ;  
How dar'st thou with that sullen luggage  
O' thyself, old ir'n, and other baggage,  
With which thy steed of bone and leather  
Has broke his wind in halting hither ;  
How dur'st th', I say, adventure thus  
'T' oppose thy lumber against us ?  
Could thine impertinence find out  
No work t' employ itself about,  
Where thou, secure from wooden blow,  
Thy busy vanity might show ?  
Was no dispute a foot between  
The caterwauling bretheren ?  
No subtle question raisèd among ,  
Those out-o'-their-wits, and those i' th' wrong ?

No prize between those combatants  
O' th' times, the land and water saints ;  
Where thou mightst stickle, without hazard  
Of outrage to thy hide and mazzard,  
And not, for want of business, come  
To us to be thus troublesome,  
To interrupt our better sort  
Of disputants, and spoil our sport ?  
Was there no felony, no bawd,  
Cut-purse, or burglary abroad ?  
No stolen pig nor plundered goose,  
To tie thee up from breaking loose ?  
No ale unlicensed, broken hedge,  
For which thou statute mightst allege,  
To keep thee busy from foul evil,  
And shame due to thee from the devil ?  
Did no committee sit, where he  
Might cut out journey-work for thee,  
And set th' a task, with subornation,  
To stitch up sale and sequestration ;  
To cheat, with holiness and zeal,  
All parties and the common-weal ?  
Much better had it been for thee  
H' had kept thee where th' art used to be ;  
Or sent th' on business any whither,  
So he had never brought thee hither :  
But if th' hast brain enough in skull  
To keep within its lodging whole,  
And not provoke the rage of stones,  
And cudgels, to thy hide and bones ;  
Tremble and vanish while thou may'st,  
Which I'll not promise if thou stay'st.'

At this the knight grew high in wrath,  
And lifting hands and eyes up both,  
Three times he smote on stomach stout,  
From whence, at length, these words broke out :  
'Was I for this entitled Sir,  
And girt with trusty sword and spur,  
For fame and honour to wage battle,  
Thus to be braved by foe to cattle ?  
Not all the pride that makes thee swell  
As big as thou dost blown-up veal ;



Nor all thy tricks and sleights to cheat,  
And sell thy carrion for good meat ;  
Not all thy magic to repair  
Decayed old age, in tough lean ware,  
Make natural death appear thy work,  
And stop the gangrene in stale pork ;  
Not all that force that makes thee proud,  
Because by bullock ne'er withstood ;  
Though armed with all thy cleavers, knives,  
And axes made to hew down lives,  
Shall save, or help thee to evade  
The hand of justice, or this blade,  
Which I, her sword-bearer, do carry,  
For civil deed and military.  
Nor shall these words, of venom base,  
Which thou hast from their native place,  
Thy stomach, pumped to fling on me,  
Go unrevenge'd, though I am free :  
Thou down the same throat shall devour 'em  
Like tainted beef, and pay dear for 'em.  
Nor shall it e'er be said that wight  
With gauntlet blue and bases white,  
And round blunt truncheon by his side,  
So great a man-at-arms defied,  
With words far bitterer than wormwood,  
That would in Job or Grizel stir mood.  
Dogs with their tongues their wounds do heal ;  
But men with hands, as thou shalt feel.'

This said, with hasty rage he snatched  
His gun-shot, that in holsters watched ;  
And bending cock, he levelled full  
Against th' outside of Talgol's skull ;  
Vowing that he should ne'er stir further,  
Nor henceforth cow nor bullock murder.  
But Pallas came in shape of rust,  
And 'twixt the spring and hammer thrust  
Her gorgon-shield, which made the cock  
Stand stiff, as 'twere turned to a stock.  
Meanwhile fierce Talgol gathering night,  
With rugged truncheon charged the knight ;  
But he, with petronel upheaved, '  
Instead of shield, the blow received ;

The gun recoiled as well it might,  
Not used to such a kind of fight,  
And shrunk from its great master's gripe,  
Knocked down, and stunned, with mortal stripe :  
Then Hudibras, with furious haste,  
Drew out his sword ; yet not so fast,  
But Talgol first, with hardy thwack,  
Twice bruised his head, and twice his back ;  
But when his nut-brown sword was out,  
Courageously he laid about,  
Imprinting many a wound upon  
His mortal foe, the truncheon.  
The trusty cudgel did oppose  
Itself against dead-doing blows,  
To guard his leader from fell bane,  
And then revenged itself again :  
And though the sword, some understood,  
In force, had much the odds of wood,  
'Twas nothing so ; both sides were balanc't  
So equal, none knew which was val'ant'st :  
For wood, with honour be'ng engaged,  
Is so implacably enraged,  
Though iron hew, and mangle sore,  
Wood wounds and bruises honour more.  
And now both knights were out of breath,  
Tired in the hot pursuit of death ;  
Whilst all the rest, amazed, stood still,  
Expecting which should take, or kill.  
This Hudibras observed ; and fretting  
Conquest should be so long a-getting,  
He drew up all his force into  
One body, and that into one blow ;  
But Talgol wisely avoided it  
By cunning flight ; for had it hit,  
The upper part of him the blow  
Had slit, as sure as that below.

Meanwhile the incomparable Colon,  
To aid his friend, began to fall on ;  
Him Ralph encountered, and straight grew  
A dismal combat 'twixt them two ;  
Th' one armed with metal, th' other with wood ;  
This fit for bruise, and that for blood.

With many a stiff thwack, many a bang,  
Hard crab-tree, and old iron rang ;  
While none that saw them could divine  
To which side conquest would incline,  
Until Magnano, who did envy  
That two should with so many men vie,  
By subtle stratagem of brain  
Performed what force could ne'er attain,  
For he, by foul hap, having found  
Where thistles grew on barren ground,  
In haste he drew his weapon out,  
And having cropped them from the root,  
He clapped them under the horse's tail,  
With prickles sharper than a nail,  
The angry beast did straight resent  
The wrong done to his fundament,  
Began to kick, and fling, and wince,  
As if h' had been beside his sense,  
Striving to disengage from thistle,  
That galled him sorely under his tail ;  
Instead of which he threw the pack  
Of squire and baggage from his back ;  
And blundering still with smarting rump,  
He gave the knight's steed such a thump  
As made him reel. The knight did stoop,  
And sat on further side aslope.  
This Talgol viewing, who had now,  
By flight, escaped the fatal blow,  
He rallied, and again fell to't ;  
For catching foe by nearer foot,  
He lifted with such might and strength,  
As would have hurled him thrice his length,  
And dashed his brains, if any, out ;  
But Mars, who still protects the stout,  
In pudding-time came to his aid,  
And under him the bear conveyed ;  
The bear, upon whose soft fur-gown  
The knight with all his weight fell down.  
The friendly rug preserved the ground,  
And headlong knight, from bruise or wound :  
Like feather-bed betwixt a wall,  
And heavy brunt of cannon-ball. 。

As Sancho on a blanket fell,  
And had no hurt ; ours fared as well  
In body, though his mighty spirit,  
B'ing heavy, did not so well bear it.  
The bear was in a greater fright,  
Beat down, and worsted by the knight ;  
He roared, and raged, and flung about,  
'To shake off bondage from his snout.  
His wrath inflamed, boiled o'er, and from  
His jaws of death he threw the foam ;  
Fury in stranger postures threw him,  
And more, than ever herald drew him.  
He tore the earth, which he had saved  
From squelch of knight, and stormed and raved ;  
And vexed the more, because the harms  
He felt were 'gainst the law of arms :  
For men he always took to be  
His friends, and dogs the enemy,  
Who never so much hurt had done him  
As his own side did falling on him.  
It grieved him to the guts, that they,  
For whom h' had fought so many a fray,  
And served with loss of blood so long,  
Should offer such inhuman wrong ;  
Wrong of unsoldier-like condition ;  
For which he flung down his commission,  
And laid about him, till his nose  
From thrall of ring and cord broke loose.  
Soon as he felt himself enlarged,  
Through thickest of his foes he charged,  
And made way through th' amazèd crew,  
Some he o'er-ran, and some o'erthrew,  
But took none ; for, by hasty flight,  
He strove t' escape pursuit of knight,  
From whom he fled with as much haste  
And dread, as he the rabble chased.  
In haste he fled, and so did they,  
Each and his fear a several way.

Crowdero only kept the field,  
Not stirring from the place he held,  
Though beaten down, and wounded sore,  
I' th' fiddle, and the leg that bore

One side of him, not that of bone,  
But much its better, th' wooden one.  
He spying Hudibras lie strewed  
Upon the ground, like log of wood,  
With fright of fall, supposed wound,  
And loss of water, in a swoond,  
In haste he snatched the wooden limb,  
That hurt i' th' ankle lay by him,  
And fitting it for sudden fight,  
Straight drew it up, t' attack the knight,  
For getting up on stump and huckle,  
He with the foe began to buckle,  
Vowing to be revenged for breach  
Of crowd and skin, upon the wretch,  
Sole author of all detriment  
He and his fiddle underwent.

But Ralpho, who had now begun  
T' adventure resurrection  
From heavy squelch, and had got up  
Upon his legs, with sprainèd crup,  
Looking about, beheld the bard  
To charge the knight entranced prepared,  
He snatched his whinyard up, that fled  
When he was falling off his steed,  
As rats do from a falling house,  
To hide itself from rage of blows ;  
And winged with speed and fury, flew  
To rescue knight from black and blue.  
Which ere he could achieve, his sconce  
The leg encountered twice and once ;  
And now 'twas raised, to smite again,  
When Ralpho thrust himself between ;  
He took the blow upon his arm,  
To shield the knight from further harm ;  
And, joining wrath with force, bestowed  
O' th' wooden member such a load,  
That down it fell, and with it bore  
Crowdero, whom it propped before.  
To him the squire right nimbly run,  
And setting conquering foot upon  
His trunk, thus spoke : ' What desperate frenzy  
Made thee, thou whelp of sin, to fancy

Thyself, and all that coward rabble,  
'T' encounter us in battle able?  
How durst th', I say, oppose thy curship  
'Gainst arms, authority, and worship,  
And Hudibras or me provoke,  
'Though all thy limbs were heart of oak,  
And th' other half of thee as good  
'To bear out blows as that of wood?  
Could not the whipping-post prevail,  
With all its rhetoric, nor the jail,  
To keep from flaying scourge thy skin,  
And ankle free from iron gin?  
Which now thou shalt—but first our care  
Must see how Hudibras does fare.'

'This said, he gently raised the knight,  
And set him on his haunch upright;  
'To rouse him from lethargic dump,  
He tweaked his nose, with gentle thump  
Knocked on his breast, as if 't had been  
To raise the spirits lodged within:  
They, wakened with the noise, did fly  
From inward room, to window eye,  
And gently opening lid, the casement,  
Looked out, but yet with some amazement.  
This gladdened Ralpho much to see,  
Who thus bespoke the knight: quoth he,  
'Tweaking his nose, 'You are, great Sir,  
A self-denying conqueror;  
As high, victorious, and great,  
As e'er fought for the churches yet,  
If you will give yourself but leave  
'To make out what y' already have;  
That's victory. The foe, for dread  
Of your nine-worthiness, is fled,  
All, save Crowdero, for whose sake  
You did th' espoused Cause undertake;  
And he lies prisoner at your feet,  
To be disposed as you think meet,  
Either for life, or death, or sale,  
The gallows, or perpetual jail;  
For one wink of your powerful eye  
Must sentence him to live or die.

His fiddle is your proper purchase,  
Won in the service of the churches ;  
And by your doom must be allowed  
To be, or be no more, a crowd ;  
For though success did not confer  
Just title on the conqueror ;  
Though dispensations were not strong  
Conclusions, whether right or wrong ;  
Although out-goings did confirm,  
And owning were but a mere term ;  
Yet as the wicked have no right  
To th' creature, though usurped by might,  
The property is in the saint,  
From whom th' injuriously detain't ;  
Of him they hold their luxuries,  
Their dogs, their horses, whores, and dice,  
Their riots, revels, masks, delights,  
Pimps, buffoons, fiddlers, parasites ;  
All which the saints have title to,  
And ought t' enjoy, if they'd their due.  
What we take from them is no more  
Than what was ours by right before ;  
For we are their true landlords still,  
And they our tenants but at will.'

At this the knight began to rouse,  
And by degrees grow valorous :  
He stared about, and seeing none  
Of all his foes remain but one,  
He snatched his weapon that lay near him,  
And from the ground began to rear him,  
Vowing to make Crowdero pay  
For all the rest that ran away.  
But Ralpho now, in colder blood,  
His fury mildly thus withstood :  
'Great Sir,' quoth he, 'your mighty spirit  
Is raised too high ; this slave does merit  
To be the hangman's business, sooner  
Than from your hand to have the honour  
Of his destruction ; I that am  
A nothingness in deed and name,  
Did scorn to hurt his forfeit carcase,  
Or ill entreat his fiddle or case :

Will you, great Sir, that glory blot  
In cold blood, which you gained in hot?  
Will you employ your conquering sword  
To break a fiddle, and your word?  
For though I fought and overcame,  
And quarter gave, 'twas in your name :  
For great commanders always own  
What's prosperous by the soldier done.  
'To save, when you have power to kill,  
Argues your power above your will ;  
And that your will and power have less  
Than both might have of selfishness.  
This power which, now alive, with dread  
He trembles at, if he were dead,  
Would no more keep the slave in awe,  
Than if you were a knight of straw ;  
For death would then be his conqueror,  
Not you, and free him from that terror,  
If danger from his life accrue,  
Or honour from his death, to you,  
'Twere policy and honour too,  
To do as you resolved to do :  
But, Sir, 'twould wrong your valour much  
To say it needs, or fears a crutch.  
Great conquerors greater glory gain  
By foes in triumph led, than slain :  
The laurels that adorn their brows  
Are pulled from living, not dead boughs,  
And living foes : the greatest fame  
Of cripple slain can be but lame :  
One half of him's already slain,  
The other is not worth your pain ;  
Th' honour can but on one side light,  
As worship did, when y' were dubbed knight.  
Wherefore I think it better far  
To keep him prisoner of war ;  
And let him fast in bonds abide,  
At court of justice to be tried ;  
Where if h' appear so bold or crafty,  
There may be danger in his safety :  
If any member there dislike  
His face, or to his beard have pique ;



Or if his death will save, or yield  
Revenge or fright, it is revealed,  
Though he has quarter, ne'ertheless  
Y' have power to hang him when you please ;  
This has been often done by some  
Of our great conquerors, you know whom ;  
And has by most of us been held  
Wise justice, and to some revealed :  
For words and promises, that yoke  
The conqueror, are quickly broke ;  
Like Samson's cuffs, though by his own  
Direction and advice put on.  
For if we should fight for the Cause  
By rules of military laws,  
And only do what they call just,  
The Cause would quickly fall to dust.  
This we among ourselves may speak ;  
But to the wicked or the weak  
We must be cautious to declare  
Perfection-truths, such as these are.'

This said, the high outrageous mettle  
Of knight began to cool and settle.  
He liked the squire's advice, and soon  
Resolved to see the business done ;  
And therefore charged him first to bind  
Crowdero's hands on rump behind,  
And to its former place, and use,  
The wooden member to reduce ;  
But force it take an oath before,  
Ne'er to bear arms against him more.

Ralpho despatched with speedy haste,  
And having tied Crowdero fast,  
He gave Sir Knight the end of cord,  
To lead the captive of his sword  
In triumph, while the steeds he caught,  
And them to further service brought.  
The squire in state rode on before,  
And on his nut-brown whinyard bore  
The trophy-fiddle and the case,  
Leaning on shoulder like a mace.  
The knight himself did after ride,  
Leading Crowdero by his side ;

And towed him, if he lagged behind,  
Like boat against the tide and wind.  
Thus grave and solemn they march on,  
Until quite through the town they 'ad gone ;  
At further end at which there stands  
An ancient castle, that commands  
'Th' adjacent parts ; in all the fabric  
You shall not see one stone nor a brick,  
But all of wood, by powerful spell  
Of magic made impregnable :  
'There's neither iron-bar nor gate,  
Portcullis, chain, nor bolt, nor grate ;  
And yet men durance there abide,  
In dungeon scarce three inches wide ;  
With roof so low, that under it  
'They never stand, but lie or sit ;  
And yet so foul, that whoso is in,  
Is to the middle-leg in prison ;  
In circle magical confined,  
With walls of subtle air and wind,  
Which none are able to break thorough,  
Until they're freed by head of borough.  
'Thither arrived, th' adventurous knight  
And bold squire from their steeds alight  
At th' outward wall, near which there stands  
A Bastile, built t' imprison hands ;  
By strange enchantment made to setter  
'The lesser parts, and free the greater :  
For tho' the body may creep through,  
The hands in grate are fast enow ;  
And when a circle 'bout the wrist  
Is made by beadle exorcist,  
'The body feels the spur and switch,  
As if 'twere ridden post by witch,  
At twenty miles an hour pace,  
And yet ne'er stirs out of the place.  
On top of this there is a spire,  
On which Sir Knight first bids the squire  
The fiddle, and its spoils, the case,  
In manner of a trophy, place.  
That done, they ope the trap-door gate,  
And let Crowdero down thereat.

Crowdero making doleful face,  
‘Like hermit poor in pensive place,’  
To dungeon they the wretch commit,  
And the survivor of his feet ;  
But th’ other that had broke the peace,  
And head of knighthood, they release,  
Though a delinquent false and forged,  
Yet being a stranger, he’s enlarged ;  
While his comrade, that did no hurt,  
Is clapped up fast in prison for’t.  
So justice, while she winks at crimes,  
Stumbles on innocence sometimes.

## CANTO III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The scattered rout return and rally,  
Surround the place ; the knight does sally,  
And is made prisoner : then they seize  
Th' enchanted fort by storm, release  
Crowdero, and put the squire in's place :  
I should have first said Hudibras.

Av me ! what perils do environ  
The man that meddles with cold iron !  
What plaguy mischiefs and mishaps  
Do dog him still with after-claps !  
For though dame Fortune seem to smile,  
And leer upon him for a while,  
She'll after show him, in the nick  
Of all his glories, a dog-trick.  
This any man may sing or say  
I' th' ditty called, ' What if a day ? '  
For Hudibras, who thought he 'ad won  
The field, as certain as a gun,  
And having routed the whole troop,  
With victory was cock-a-hoop ;  
Thinking he 'ad done enough to purchase  
Thanksgiving-day among the churches,  
Wherein his mettle and brave worth  
Might be explained by holder-forth,  
And registered by fame eternal,  
In deathless pages of diurnal ;  
Found in few minutes, to his cost,  
He did but count without his host ;  
And that a turn-stile is more certain  
Than, in events of war, dame Fortune.  
For now the late faint-hearted rout,  
O'erthrown and scattered round about,  
Chased by the horror of their fear,  
From bloody fray of knight and bear,

All but the dogs, who in pursuit  
Of the knight's victory stood to't,  
And most ignobly fought to get  
The honour of his blood and sweat,  
Seeing the coast was free and clear  
O' the conquered and the conqueror,  
Took heart again, and faced about,  
As if they meant to stand it out :  
For now the half-defeated bear,  
Attacked by th' enemy i' th' rear,  
Finding their number grew too great  
For him to make a safe retreat,  
Like a bold chieftain faced about ;  
But wisely doubting to hold out,  
Gave way to fortune, and with haste  
Faced the proud foe, and fled, and faced,  
Retiring still, until he found  
He 'ad got th' advantage of the ground ;  
And then as valiantly made head  
To check the foe, and forthwith fled,  
Leaving no art untried, nor trick  
Of warrior stout and politic,  
Until, in spite of hot pursuit,  
He gained a pass, to hold dispute  
On better terms, and stop the course  
Of the proud foe. With all his force  
He bravely charged, and for a while  
Forced their whole body to recoil ;  
But still their numbers so increased,  
He found himself at length oppressed,  
And all evasions so uncertain,  
To save himself for better fortune,  
That he resolved, rather than yield,  
To die with honour in the field,  
And sell his hide and carcase at  
A price as high and desperate  
As e'er he could. This resolution  
He forthwith put in execution,  
And bravely threw himself among  
Th' enemy, i' th' greatest throng ;  
But what could single valour do,  
Against so numerous a foe ?

Yet much he did, indeed too much  
To be believed, where th' odds were such  
But one against a multitude,  
Is more than mortal can make good:  
For while one party he opposed,  
His rear was suddenly enclosed,  
And no room left him for retreat,  
Or fight against a foe so great.

For now the mastiffs, charging home,  
To blows and handy-gripes were come ;  
While manfully himself he bore,  
And, setting his right foot before,  
He raised himself to show how tall  
His person was above them all.  
This equal shame and envy stirred  
In th' enemy, that one should beard  
So many warriors, and so stout,  
As he had done, and staved it out,  
Disdaining to lay down his arms,  
And yield on honourable terms.  
Enragèd thus, some in the rear  
Attacked him, and some everywhere,  
Till down he fell ; yet falling fought,  
And, being down, still laid about ;  
As Widdrington, in doleful dumps,  
Is said to fight upon his stumps.

But all, alas ! had been in vain,  
And he inevitably slain,  
If Trulla and Cerdon, in the nick,  
To rescue him had not been quick :  
For Trulla, who was light of foot,  
As shafts, which long-field Parthians shoot,  
But not so light as to be borne  
Upon the ears of standing corn,  
Or trip it o'er the water quicker  
Than witches, when their staves they liquor,  
As some report, was got among  
The foremost of the martial throng ;  
There pitying the vanquished bear,  
She called to Cerdon, who stood near,  
Viewing the bloody fight ; to whom,  
' Shall we quoth she, ' stand still hum-drum,

And see stout bruin, all alone,  
By numbers basely overthrown?  
Such feats already he 'as achieved,  
In story not to be believed,  
And 'twould to us be shame enough,  
Not to attempt to fetch him off.'

'I would,' quoth he, 'venture a limb  
To second thee, and rescue him;  
But then we must about it straight,  
Or else our aid will come too late;  
Quarter he scorns, he is so stout,  
And therefore cannot long hold out.'  
This said, they waved their weapons round  
About their heads, to clear the ground,  
And joining forces, laid about  
So fiercely, that th' amazèd rout  
Turned tail again, and straight begun,  
As if the devil drove, to run.  
Meanwhile th' approached th' place where bruin  
Was now engaged to mortal ruin:  
The conquering foe they soon assailed,  
First Trulla staved, and Cerdon tailed,  
Until their mastiffs loosed their hold;  
And yet, alas! do what they could,  
The worsted bear came off with store  
Of bloody wounds, but all before:  
For as Achilles, dipped in pond,  
Was anabaptized free from wound,  
Made proof against dead-doing steel  
All over, but the pagan heel;  
So did our champion's arms defend  
All of him but the other end,  
His head and ears, which in the martial  
Encounter lost a leathern parcel;  
For as an Austrian archduke once  
Had one ear, which in ducatoons  
Is half the coin, in battle pared  
Close to his head, so bruin fared;  
But tugged and pulled on th' other side,  
Like scrivener newly crucified;  
Or like the late-collected leathern  
Ears of the circumcisèd brethren.'

But gentle Trulla into th' ring  
He wore in's nose conveyed a string,  
With which she marched before, and led  
The warrior to a grassy bed,  
As authors write, in a cool shade,  
Which eglantine and roses made ;  
Close by a softly-murmuring stream,  
Where lovers used to loll and dream ;  
There leaving him to his repose,  
Secured from pursuit of foes,  
And wanting nothing but a song,  
And a well-tuned theorbo hung  
Upon a bough to ease the pain  
His tugged ears suffered, with a strain.  
They both drew up, to march in quest  
Of his great leader, and the rest.

For Orsin, who was more renowned  
For stout maintaining of his ground  
In standing fights, than for pursuit,  
As being not so quick of foot,  
Was not long able to keep pace  
With others that pursued the chase,  
But found himself left far behind,  
Both out of heart and out of wind.  
Grieved to behold his bear pursued  
So basely by a multitude,  
And like to fall, not by the prowess,  
But numbers, of his coward foes,  
He raged, and kept as heavy a coil as  
Stout Hercules for loss of Hylas ;  
Forcing the vallies to repeat  
The accents of his sad regret :  
He beat his breast, and tore his hair,  
For loss of his dear crony bear ;  
That Echo, from the hollow ground,  
His doleful wailings did resound  
More wistfully, by many times,  
Than in small poets splay-foot rhymes,  
That make her, in their ruthless stories,  
To answer to int'rogatories,  
And most unconscionably depose  
To things of which she nothing knows ;



And when she has said all she can say,  
'Tis wrested to the lover's fancy.  
Quoth he, 'O whither, wicked Bruin,  
Art thou fled? to my'—Echo, *Ruin*.  
'I thought th' hadst scorn'd to budge a step  
For fear.' Quoth Echo, *Marry guep*.  
'Am I not here to take thy part?  
'Then what has quailed thy stubborn heart?  
Have these bones rattled, and this head  
So often in thy quarrel bled?  
Nor did I ever winch or grudge it  
For thy dear sake.' Quoth she, *Mum budget*.  
'Think'st thou 'twill not be laid i' th' dish  
'Thou turn'dst thy back?' Quoth Echo, *Pish*.  
'To run from those th' hadst overcome  
Thus cowardly?' Quoth Echo, *Mum*.  
'But what a vengeance makes thee fly  
From me too, as thine enemy?  
Or, if thou hast no thought of me,  
Nor what I have endured for thee,  
Yet shame and honour might prevail  
To keep thee thus from turning tail:  
For who would grutch to spend his blood in  
His honour's cause?' Quoth she, *A Puddin*.  
This said, his grief to anger turned,  
Which in his manly stomach burned;  
Thirst of revenge, and wrath, in place  
Of sorrow, now began to blaze.  
He vowed the authors of his woe  
Should equal vengeance undergo;  
And with their bones and flesh pay dear  
For what he suffered, and his bear.  
This be'ng resolved, with equal speed  
And rage he hasted to proceed  
To action straight, and giving o'er  
To search for bruin any more,  
He went in quest of Hudibras,  
To find him out where'er he was;  
And, if he were above ground, vowed  
He'd ferret him, lurk where he would.  
But scarce had he a furlong on  
This resolute adventure gone,

When he encountered with that crew  
Whom Hudibras did late subdue.  
Honour, revenge, contempt and shame,  
Did equally their breasts inflame.  
'Mong these the fierce Magnano was,  
And Talgol, foe to Hudibras ;  
Cerdon and Colon, warriors stout,  
And resolute, as ever fought ;  
Whom furious Orsin thus bespoke :  
' Shall we,' quoth he, ' thus basely brook  
The vile affront that paltry ass,  
And feeble scoundrel, Hudibras,  
With that more paltry ragamuffin,  
Ralpho, with vapouring and huffing,  
Have put upon us, like tame cattle,  
As if th' had routed us in battle ?  
For my part, it shall ne'er be said  
I for the washing gave my head :  
Nor did I turn my back for fear  
Of them, but losing of my bear,  
Which now I'm like to undergo ;  
For whether these fell wounds, or no,  
He has received in fight, are mortal,  
Is more than all my skill can fortel ;  
Nor do I know what is become  
Of him, more than the Pope of Rome :  
But if I can but find them out  
That caused it, as I shall no doubt,  
Where'er th' in hugger-mugger lurk,  
I'll make them rue their handy-work,  
And wish that they had rather dared  
To pull the devil by the beard.'  
Quoth Cerdon, ' Noble Orsin, th' hast  
Great reason to do as thou say'st,  
And so has every body here,  
As well as thou hast, or thy bear :  
Others may do as they see good ;  
But if this twig be made of wood  
That will hold tack, I'll make the fur  
Fly 'bout the ears of that old cur,  
And th' other mongrel vermin, Ralph,  
That braved us all in his behalf.

Thy bear is safe, and out of peril,  
Though lugged indeed, and wounded very ill ;  
Myself and Trulla made a shift  
To help him out at a dead lift ;  
And having brought him bravely off,  
Have left him where he's safe enough :  
There let him rest ; for if we stay,  
The slaves may hap to get away.'

This said, they all engaged to join  
Their forces in the same design,  
And forthwith put themselves in search  
Of Hudibras upon their march :  
Where leave we them a while, to tell  
What the victorious knight befel ;  
For such, Crowdero being fast  
In dungeon shut, we left him last.  
Triumphant laurels seemed to grow  
No where so green as on his brow ;  
Laden with which, as well as tired  
With conquering toil, he now retired  
Unto a neighbouring castle by,  
'To rest his body, and apply  
Fit medicines to each glorious bruise  
He got in fight, reds, blacks, and blues ;  
To mollify th' uneasy pang  
Of every honourable bang,  
Which being by skilful midwife dressed,  
He laid him down to take his rest.

But all in vain : he 'ad got a hurt  
O' th' inside, of a deadlier sort,  
By Cupid made, who took his stand  
Upon a widow's jointure land,  
For he, in all his amorous battles,  
No 'dvantage finds like goods and chattels,  
Drew home his bow, and aiming right,  
Let fly an arrow at the knight ;  
The shaft against a rib did glance,  
And gall him in the purtenance ;  
But time had somewhat 'suaged his pain,  
After he found his suit in vain :  
For that proud dame, for whom his soul  
Was burnt in's belly like a coal,

That belly that so oft did ache,  
And suffer griping for her sake,  
Till purging comfits, and ants' eggs,  
Had almost brought him off his legs,  
Used him so like a base rascallion,  
That old Pyg—what d' y' call him—malion,  
That cut his mistress out of stone,  
Had not so hard a hearted one.  
She had a thousand jadish tricks,  
Worse than a mule that flings and kicks ;  
'Mong which one cross-grained freak she had,  
As insolent as strange and mad ;  
She could love none but only such  
As scorned and hated her as much.  
'Twas a strange riddle of a lady ;  
Not love, if any loved her : hey day !  
So cowards never use their might,  
But against such as will not fight.  
So some diseases have been found  
Only to seize upon the sound.  
He that gets her by heart, must say her  
The back way, like a witch's prayer.  
Meanwhile the knight had no small task  
To compass what he durst not ask :  
He loves, but dares not make the motion ;  
Her ignorance is his devotion :  
Like caitiff vile, that for misdeed  
Rides with his face to rump of steed ;  
Or rowing scuil, he's fain to love,  
Look one way, and another move ;  
Or like a tumbler, that does play  
His game, and looks another way,  
Until he seize upon the coney ;  
Just so does he by matrimony.  
But all in vain ; her subtle snout  
Did quickly wind his meaning out ;  
Which she returned with too much scorn,  
To be by man of honour borne ;  
Yet much he bore, until the distress  
He suffered from his spiteful mistress  
Did stir his stomach, and the pain  
He had enured from her disdain

Turned to regret so resolute,  
 That he resolved to wave his suit,  
 And either to renounce her quite,  
 Or for a while play least in sight.  
 This resolution being put on,  
 He kept some months, and more had done,  
 But being brought so nigh by fate,  
 The victory he achieved so late  
 Did set his thoughts agog, and ope  
 A door to discontinued hope,  
 That seemed to promise he might win  
 His dame too, now his hand was in ;  
 And that his valour, and the honour  
 He 'ad newly gained, might work upon her.  
 These reasons made his mouth to water  
 With amorous longings to be at her.

Thought he, unto himself,—Who knows  
 But this brave conquest o'er my foes  
 May reach her heart, and make that stoop,  
 As I but now have forced the troop?  
 If nothing can oppugnè love,  
 And virtue invious ways can prove,  
 What may not he confide to do  
 That brings both love and virtue too?  
 But thou bring'st valour, too, and wit,  
 Two things that seldom fail to hit.  
 Valour's a mouse-trap, with a gin,  
 Which women oft are taken in :  
 Then, Hudibras, why shouldst thou fear  
 To be, that art a conqueror?  
 Fortune the audacious doth *juvare*,  
 But lets the timidous miscarry :  
 Then, while the honour thou hast got  
 Is spick and span new, piping hot,  
 Strike her up bravely thou hadst best,  
 And trust thy fortune with the rest.  
 Such thoughts as these the knight did keep  
 More than his bangs, or fleas, from sleep ;  
 And as an owl, that in a barn  
 Sees a mouse creeping in the corn,  
 Sits still, and shuts his round blue eyes,  
 As if he slept, until he spies

The little beast within his reach,  
Then starts, and seizes on the wretch ;  
So from his couch the knight did start,  
To seize upon the widow's heart,  
Crying, with hasty tone and hoarse,  
'Ralpho, despatch, to horse, to horse !'  
And 'twas but time ; for now the rout,  
We left engaged to seek him out,  
By speedy marches were advanced,  
Up to the fort where we ensconced,  
And all th' avenues had possessed,  
About the place, from east to west.

That done, a while they made a halt,  
'To view the ground, and where t' assault :  
Then called a council, which was best,  
By siege, or onslaught, to invest  
The enemy ; and 'twas agreed  
By storm and onslaught to proceed.  
This being resolved, in comely sort  
They now drew up t' attack the fort ;  
When Hudibras, about to enter  
Upon another-gates adventure,  
'To Ralpho called aloud to arm,  
Not dreaming of approaching storm.  
Whether dame Fortune, or the care  
Of angel bad, or tutelar,  
Did arm, or thrust him on a danger,  
'To which he was an utter stranger,  
'That foresight might, or might not, blot  
The glory he had newly got ;  
• Or to his shame it might be said,  
They took him napping in his bed ;  
To them we leave it to expound,  
• That deal in sciences profound.

His courser scarce he had bestrid,  
And Ralpho that on which he rid,  
When setting ope the postern gate,  
Which they thought best to sally at,  
'The foe appeared, drawn up and drilled,  
Ready to charge them in the field.  
'This somewhat startled the bold knight,  
Surprised with th' unexpected sight :

The bruises of his bones and flesh  
 He thought began to smart afresh ;  
 Till recollecting wonted courage,  
 His fear was soon converted to rage,  
 And thus he spoke : ' The coward foe,  
 Whom we but now gave quarter to,  
 Look, yonder's rallied, and appears  
 As if they had out-run their fears ;  
 The glory we did lately get,  
 The Fates command us to repeat ;  
 And to their wills we must succumb,  
*Quocunque trahunt*, 'tis our doom.  
 This is the same numeric crew  
 Which we so lately did subdue ;  
 The self-same individuals that  
 Did run, as mice do from a cat,  
 When we courageously did wield  
 Our martial weapons in the field,  
 To tug for victory : and when  
 We shall our shining blades again  
 Brandish in terror o'er our heads,  
 They'll straight resume their wonted dreads.  
 Fear is an ague, that forsakes  
 And haunts, by fits, those whom it takes ;  
 And they'll opine they feel the pain  
 And blows they felt to-day, again.  
 Then let us boldly charge them home,  
 And make no doubt to overcome.'

This said, his courage to inflame,  
 He called upon his mistress' name.  
 His pistol next he cocked a-new ;  
 And out his nut-brown whinyard drew :  
 And placing Ralpho in the front,  
 Reserved himself to bear the brunt,  
 As expert warriors use ; then plied,  
 With iron heel, his courser's side,  
 Conveying sympathetic speed  
 From heel of knight to heel of steed.

Meanwhile the foe, with equal rage  
 And speed advancing to engage,  
 Both parties now were drawn so close,  
 Almost to come to handy-blows ;

When Orsin first let fly a stone  
At Ralpho ; not so huge a one  
As that which Diomed did maul  
Æneas on the back withal ;  
Yet big enough, if rightly hurled,  
T' have sent him to another world,  
Whether above ground, or below,  
Which saints, twice dipped, are destined to.  
The danger startled the bold squire,  
And made him some few steps retire ;  
But Hudibras advanced to 's aid,  
And roused his spirits half dismayed :  
He wisely doubting lest the shot  
O' th' enemy, now growing hot,  
Might at a distance gall, pressed close  
To come, pell-mell, to handy-blows,  
And that he might their aim decline,  
Advanced still in an oblique line ;  
But prudently forebore to fire,  
Till breast to breast he had got nigher ;  
As expert warriors use to do,  
When hand to hand they charge their foe.  
This order the adventurous knight,  
Most soldier-like, observed in fight,  
When Fortune, as she's wont, turned fickle,  
And for the foe began to stickle.  
The more shame for her goodyship  
To give so near a friend the slip.  
For Colon, choosing out a stone,  
Levelled so right, it thumped upon  
His manly paunch, with such a force,  
As almost beat him off his horse.  
He loosed his whinyard, and the rein,  
But laying fast hold on the mane,  
Preserved his seat : and, as a goose  
In death contracts his talons close,  
So did the knight, and with one claw  
The trigger of his pistol draw.  
The gun went off ; and as it was  
Still fatal to stout Hudibras,  
In all his feats of arms, when least  
He dream'd of it, to prosper best,



So now he fared : the shot, let fly  
At random, 'mong the enemy,  
Pierced 'Talgol's gaberdine, and grazing  
Upon his shoulder, in the passing  
Lodged in Magnano's brass habergeon,  
Who straight, 'A surgeon !' cried—'A surgeon !'  
He tumbled down, and, as he fell,  
Did 'Murther ! murther ! murther !' yell.  
'This startled their whole body so,  
That if the knight had not let go  
His arms, but been in warlike plight,  
He 'ad won, the second time, the fight ;  
As, if the squire had but fallen on,  
He had inevitably done :  
But he, diverted with the care  
Of Hudibras his wound, forbore  
'To press th' advantage of his fortune,  
While danger did the rest dishearten.  
For he with Cerdon being engaged  
In close encounter, they both waged  
'The fight so well, 'twas hard to say  
Which side was like to get the day.  
And now the busy work of death  
Had tired them so, they 'greed to breathe,  
Preparing to renew the fight,  
When the disaster of the knight,  
And th' other party, did divert  
Their fell intent, and forced them part.  
Ralpho pressed up to Hudibras,  
And Cerdon where Magnano was,  
Each striving to confirm his party  
With stout encouragements and hearty.  
Quoth Ralpho, 'Courage, valiant Sir,  
And let revenge and honour stir  
Your spirits up ; once more fall on,  
The shattered foe begins to run :  
For if but half so well you knew  
To use your victory as subdue,  
'They durst not, after such a blow  
As you have given them, face us now ;  
But from so formidable a soldier,  
Had fled like crows when they smell powder.

Thrice have they seen your sword aloft  
Waved o'er their heads, and fled as oft ;  
But if you let them re-collect  
Their spirits, now dismayed and checked,  
You'll have a harder game to play,  
'Than yet ye 'ave had, to get the day.'

Thus spoke the stout squire, but was heard  
By Hudibras with small regard.

His thoughts were fuller of the bang  
He lately took, than Ralph's harangue ;  
To which he answered, 'Cruel fate  
Tells me thy counsel comes too late.  
The clotted blood within my hose,  
'That from my wounded body flows,  
With mortal crisis doth portend  
My days to appropinque an end.  
I am for action now unfit,  
Either of fortitude or wit ;  
Fortune, my foe, begins to frown,  
Resolved to pull my stomach down.  
I am not apt, upon a wound,  
Or trivial lasing, to despond ;  
Yet I'd be loth my days to curtail ;  
For if I thought my wounds not mortal,  
Or that w' had time enough as yet  
'To make an honourable retreat,  
'Twere the best course ; but if they find  
We fly, and leave our arms behind  
For them to seize on, the dishonour,  
And danger too, is such, I'll sooner  
Stand to it boldly, and take quarter,  
'To let them see I am no starter.  
In all the trade of war no feat  
Is nobler than a brave retreat :  
For those that run away, and fly,  
'Take place at least o' th' enemy.'

This said, the squire, with active speed,  
Dismounted from his bony steed,  
To seize the arms, which, by mischance,  
Fell from the bold knight in a trance.  
These being found out, and restored  
To Hudibras, their natural lord,

As a man may say, with might and main  
He hasted to get up again.  
Thrice he essayed to mount aloft ;  
But, by his weighty rear, as oft  
He was pulled back ; till having found  
Th' advantage of the rising ground,  
Thither he led his warlike steed,  
And having placed him right, with speed  
Prepared again to scale the beast,  
When Orsin, who had newly dressed  
The bloody scar upon the shoulder  
Of Talgol, with Promethean powder,  
And now was searching for the shot  
That laid Magnano on the spot,  
Beheld the sturdy squire aforesaid  
Preparing to climb up his horse-side  
He left his cure, and laying hold  
Upon his arms, with courage bold  
Cried out, ' 'Tis now no time to dally,  
The enemy begin to rally ;  
Let us that are unhurt and whole  
Fall on, and happy man be's dole.'  
This said, like to a thunderbolt,  
He flew with fury to th' assault,  
Striving th' enemy to attack  
Before he reached his horse's back.  
Ralpho was mounted now, and gotten  
O'erthwart his beast with active vaulting,  
Wriggling his body to recover  
His seat, and cast his right leg over ;  
When Orsin, rushing in, bestowed  
On horse and man so heavy a load,  
The beast was startled, and begun  
To kick and fling like mad, and run,  
Bearing the tough squire, like a sack,  
Or stout king Richard, on his back ;  
Till stumbling, he threw him down,  
Sore braised, and cast into a swoon.  
Meanwhile the knight began to rouse  
The sparkles of his wonted prow'ss ;  
He thrust his hand into his hose,  
And found, both by his eyes and nose,

'Twas only choler, and not blood,  
That from his wounded body flowed.  
This, with the hazard of the squire,  
Inflamed him with despitelike ire ;  
Courageously he faced about,  
And drew his other pistol out,  
And now had half way bent the cock,  
When Cerdon gave so fierce a shock,  
With sturdy truncheon, 'thwart his arm,  
That down it fell, and did no harm ;  
Then stoutly pressing on with speed,  
Essayed to pull him off his steed.  
'The knight his sword had only left,  
With which he Cerdon's head had cleft,  
Or at the least cropped off a limb,  
But Orsin came, and rescued him.  
He with his lance attacked the knight  
Upon his quarters opposite :  
But as a bark that in foul weather,  
'Tossed by two adverse winds together,  
Is bruised and beaten to and fro,  
And knows not which to turn him to ;  
So fared the knight between two foes,  
And knew not which of them t' oppose ;  
Till Orsin, charging with his lance  
At Hudibras, by spiteful chance  
Hit Cerdon such a bang, as stunned  
And laid him flat upon the ground.  
At this the knight began to cheer up,  
And, raising up himself on stirrup,  
Cried out, '*Victoria !* lie thou there,  
And I shall straight despatch another  
To bear thee company in death ;  
But first I'll halt a while, and breathe.'  
As well he might ; for Orsin, grieved  
At the wound that Cerdon had received,  
Ran to relieve him with his lore,  
And cure the hurt he gave before.  
Meanwhile the knight had wheeled about,  
To breathe himself, and next find out  
Th' advantage of the ground, where best  
He might the ruffled foe infest.

This being resolved, he spurred his steed,  
To run at Orsin with full speed,  
While he was busy in the care  
Of Cerdon's wound, and unaware ;  
But he was quick, and had already  
Unto the part applied remedy ;  
And seeing the enemy prepared,  
Drew up, and stood upon his guard ;  
Then, like a warrior, right expert  
And skilful in the martial art,  
The subtle knight straight made a halt,  
And judged it best to stay th' assault,  
Until he had relieved the squire,  
And then, in order, to retire ;  
Or, as occasion should invite,  
With forces joined renew the fight.  
Ralpho, by this time disentranced,  
Upon his rear himself advanced,  
Though sorely bruised ; his limbs all o'er,  
With ruthless bangs were stiff and sore :  
Right fain he would have got upon  
His feet again, to get him gone ;  
When Hudibras to aid him came.  
Quoth he, and called him by his name,  
' Courage, the day at length is ours,  
And we once more, as conquerors,  
Have both the field and honour won,  
The foe is profligate, and run ;  
I mean all such as can, for some  
This hand hath sent to their long home ;  
And some lie sprawling on the ground,  
With many a gash and bloody wound.  
Cæsar himself could never say,  
He got two victories in a day,  
As I have done, that can say, twice I,  
In one day *Veni, vidi, vici*.  
The foe's so numerous, that we  
Cannot so often *vincere*,  
And they *perire*, and yet enow  
Be left to strike an after-blow ;  
Then, lest they rally, and once more  
Put us to fight the business o'er, &

Get up, and mount thy steed ; despatch,  
And let us both their motions watch.'

Quoth Ralph, 'I should not, if I were  
In case for action, now be here ;  
Nor have I turned my back, or hanged  
A back, for fear of being banged.  
It was for you I got these harms,  
Adventuring to fetch off your arms.  
The blows and drubs I have received,  
Have bruised my body, and bereaved  
My limbs of strength : unless you stoop,  
And reach your hand to pull me up,  
I shall lie here, and be a prey  
To those who are now run away.'

'That thou shalt not,' quoth Hudibras ;  
'We read, the ancients held it was  
Nore honourable far *servare*  
*Civem*, than slay an adversary ;  
The one we oft to-day have done,  
The other shall despatch anon :  
And though th' art of a different church,  
I will not leave thee in the lurch.'  
This said, he jogged his good steed nigher,  
And steered him gently t'wards the squire ;  
Then bowing down his body, stretched  
His hand out, and at Ralpho reached ;  
When Trulla, whom he did not mind,  
Charged him like lightening behind.  
She had been long in search about  
Magnano's wound, to find it out ;  
But could find none, nor where the shot  
That had so startled him was got :  
But having found the worst was passed,  
She fell to her own work at last,  
The pillage of the prisoners,  
Which in all feats of arms was hers ;  
And now to plunder Ralph she flew,  
When Hudibras his hard fate drew  
To succour him ; for as he bowed  
To help him up, she laid a load  
Of blows so heavy, and placed so well,  
On th' other side, that down he fell.

‘Yield, scoundrel base,’ quoth she, ‘or die,  
Thy life is mine, and liberty;  
But if thou think’st I took thee tardy  
And dar’st presume to be so hardy,  
To try thy fortune o’er a-fresh,  
I’ll wave my title to thy flesh,  
Thy arms and baggage, now my right,  
And if thou hast the heart to try’t,  
I’ll lend thee back thyself a while,  
And once more, for that carcase vile,  
Fight upon tick.’—Quoth Hudibras,  
‘Thou offer’st nobly, valiant lass,  
And I shall take thee at thy word.  
First let me rise and take my sword;  
That sword, which has so oft this day  
Through squadrons of my foes made way,  
And some to other worlds despatched,  
Now with a feeble spinster matched,  
Will blush, with blood ignoble stained,  
By which no honour’s to be gained.  
But if thou’lt take m’ advice in this,  
Consider, while thou mayst, what ’tis  
To interrupt a victor’s course,  
B’ opposing such a trivial force.  
For if with conquest I come off,  
And that I shall do sure enough,  
Quarter thou canst not have, nor grace,  
By law of arms, in such a case;  
Both which I now do offer freely.’  
‘I scorn,’ quoth she, ‘thou coxcomb silly,’  
Clapping her hand upon her breech,  
To show how much she prized his speech,  
‘Quarter or counsel from a foe;  
If thou canst force me to it, do.  
But lest it should again be said,  
When I have once more won thy head,  
I took thee napping, unprepared,  
Arm, and betake thee to thy guard.’  
This said, she to her tackle fell,  
And on the knight let fall a peal  
Of blows so fierce, and pressed so near,  
That he retired, and followed ’s rear.

'Stand to't,' quoth she, 'or yield to mercy,  
It is not fighting *versie-versie*  
Shall serve they turn.'—'This stirred his spleen  
More than the danger he was in,  
The blows he felt, or was to feel,  
Although th' already made him reel.  
Honour, despite, revenge, and shame,  
At once into his stomach came ;  
Which fired it so, he raised his arm  
Above his head, and rained a storm  
Of blows so terrible and thick,  
As if he meant to hash her quick.  
But she upon her truncheon took them,  
And by oblique diversion broke them ;  
Waiting an opportunity  
To pay back all with usury,  
Which long she failed not of ; for now  
The knight with one dead-doing blow,  
Resolving to decide the fight,  
And she with quick and cunning sleight  
Avoiding it, the force and weight  
He charged upon it was so great,  
As almost swayed him to the ground :  
No sooner she th' advantage found,  
But in she flew ; and seconding,  
With home-made thrust, the heavy swing,  
She laid him flat upon his side,  
And mounting on his trunk a-stride,  
Quoth she, 'I told thee what would come  
Of all thy vapouring, base scum.  
Say, will the law of arms allow  
I may have grace, and quarter now ?  
Or wilt thou rather break thy word,  
And stain thine honour, than thy sword ?  
A man of war to damn his soul,  
In basely breaking his parole.  
And when before the fight, th' hadst vowed  
To give no quarter in cold blood ;  
Now thou hast got me for a 'Tartar,  
To make m' against my will take quarter ;  
Why dost not put me to the sword,  
But cowardly fly from thy word ?'



Quoth Hudibras, 'The day's thine own;  
 Thou and thy stars have cast me down:  
 My laurels are transplanted now,  
 And flourish on thy conquering brow:  
 My loss of honour's great enough,  
 Thou need'st not brand it with a scoff:  
 Sarcasms may eclipse thine own,  
 But cannot blur my lost renown:  
 I am not now in Fortune's power,  
 He that is down can fall no lower.  
 The ancient heroes were illust'ous  
 For being benign, and not blustrous  
 Against a vanquished foe: their swords  
 Were sharp and trenchant, not their words;  
 And did in fight but cut work out  
 T' employ their courtesies about'

Quoth she, 'Although thou hast deserved,  
 Base Slubberdegullion, to be served  
 As thou didst vow to deal with me,  
 If thou hadst got the victory:  
 Yet I shall rather act a part  
 That suits my fame, than thy desert.  
 Thy arms, thy liberty, beside  
 All that's on th' outside of thy hide,  
 Are mine by military law,  
 Of which I will not bate one straw;  
 The rest, thy life and limbs, once more,  
 Though doubly forfeit, I restore.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'It is too late  
 For me to treat or stipulate;  
 What thou command'st I must obey;  
 Yet those whom I expunged to-day,  
 Of thine own party, I let go,  
 And gave them life and freedom too,  
 Both dogs and bear, upon their parole,  
 Whom I took prisoners in this quarrel.'

Quoth Trulla, 'Whether thou or they  
 Let one another run away,  
 Concerns not me; but was't not thou  
 That gave Crowdero quarter too?  
 Crowdero whom in irons bound,  
 Thou basely threw'st into Lob's pound,

Where still he lies, and with regret  
His generous bowels rage and fret ;  
But now thy carcase shall redeem,  
And serve to be exchanged for him.'

This said, the knight did straight submit,  
And laid his weapons at her feet :  
Next he disrobed his gaberdine,  
And with it did himself resign.  
She took it, and forthwith divesting  
The mantle that she wore, said jesting,  
'Take that, and wear it for my sake ;'  
Then threw it o'er his sturdy back :  
And as the French, we conquered once,  
Now give us laws for pantaloons,  
'The length of breeches, and the gathers,  
Port-cannons, periwigs and feathers,  
Just so the proud, insulting lass  
Arrayed and dighted Hudibras.

Meanwhile the other champions, erst  
In hurry of the fight dispersed,  
Arrived, when Trulla won the day,  
'To share i' th' honour and the prey,  
And out of Hudibras his hide,  
With vengeance to be satisfied ;  
Which now they were about to pour  
Upon him in a wooden shower ;  
But Trulla thrust herself between,  
And striding o'er his back again,  
She brandished o'er her head his sword,  
And vowed they should not break her word ;  
Sh' had given him quarter, and her blood,  
Or theirs, should make that quarter good ;  
For she was bound, by law of arms,  
To see him safe from further harms.  
In dungeon deep Crowdero cast  
By Hudibras, as yet lay fast,  
Where, to the hard and ruthless stones,  
His great heart made perpetual moans :  
Him she resolved that Hudibras  
Should ransom, and supply his place.

This stopped their fury, and the basting  
Which towards Hudibras was hasting.

They thought it was but just and right,  
That what she had achieved in fight,  
She should dispose of how she pleased ;  
Crowdero ought to be released :  
Nor could that any way be done  
So well as this she pitched upon :  
For who a better could imagine ?  
This therefore they resolved t' engage in.  
The knight and squire first they made  
Rise from the ground where they were laid,  
Then mounted both upon their hacks,  
But with their faces to the backs.  
Orsin led Hudibras's beast,  
And Talgol that which Ralpho pressed ;  
Whom stout Magnano, valiant Cerdon,  
And Colon, waited as a guard on ;  
All ushering Trulla, in the rear,  
With th' arms of either prisoner.  
In this proud order and array  
They put themselves upon their way,  
Striving to reach th' enchanted castle,  
Where stout Crowdero in durance lay still.  
Thither, with greater speed than shows,  
And triumph over conquered foes  
Do use t' allow, or than the bears,  
Or pageants borne before lord-mayors,  
Are wont to use, they soon arrived,  
In order, soldier-like contrived ;  
Still marching in a warlike posture,  
As fit for battle as for muster.  
The knight and squire they first unhorse,  
And bending 'gainst the fort their force,  
They all advanced, and round about  
Begirt the magical redoubt.  
Magnan' led up in this adventure,  
And made way for the rest to enter :  
For he was skilful in black art,  
No less than he that built the fort,  
And with an iron mace laid flat  
A breach, which straight all entered at,  
And in the wooden dungeon found  
Crowdero laid upon the ground :

Him they release from durance base,  
Restored t' his fiddle and his case,  
And liberty, his thirsty rage  
With luscious vengeance to assuage ;  
For he no sooner was at large,  
But Trulla straight brought on the charge,  
And in the self-same limbo put  
• The knight and squire, where he was shut ;  
Where leaving them in th' wretched hole,  
Their bangs and durance to condole,  
Confined and conjured into narrow  
Enchanted mansion, to know sorrow,  
In the same order and array  
Which they advanced, they marched away :  
But Hudibras, who scorned to stoop  
To fortune, or be said to droop,  
Cheered up himself with ends of verse,  
And sayings of philosophers.

Quoth he, 'Th' one half of man, his mind,  
Is, *sui juris*, unconfined,  
And cannot be laid by the heels,  
Whate'er the other moiety feels.  
'Tis not restraint, or liberty,  
That makes men prisoners or free ;  
But perturbations that possess  
The mind, or equanimities.  
The whole world was not half so wide  
To Alexander, when he cried,  
Because he had but one to subdue,  
As was a paltry narrow tub to  
Diogenes : who is not said,  
For aught that ever I could read,  
To whine, put finger i' th' eye, and sob,  
Because h' had ne'er another tub.  
The ancients made two several kinds  
Of prowess in heroic minds,  
The active and the passive valiant,  
Both which are *pari libra* gallant ;  
For both to give blows, and to carry,  
In fights are equi-necessary :  
But in defeats, the passive stout  
Are always found to stand it out

Most desperately, and to out-do  
 The active, 'gainst a conquering foe :  
 'Though we with blacks and blues are suggilled,  
 Or, as the vulgar say, are cudgelled ;  
 He that is valiant, and dares fight,  
 Though drubbed, can lose no honour by't.  
 Honour's a lease for lives to come,  
 And cannot be extended from  
 'The legal tenant : 'tis a chattel  
 Not to be forfeited in battle.  
 If he that in the field is slain,  
 Be in the bed of honour lain,  
 He that is beaten may be said  
 'To lie in honour's truckle-bed.  
 For as we see th' eclipsèd sun  
 By mortals is more gazed upon  
 Than when, adorned with all his light,  
 He shines in serene sky most bright ;  
 So valour, in a low estate,  
 Is most admired and wondered at.'

Quoth Ralph, ' How great I do not know  
 We may, by being beaten, grow ;  
 But none that see how here we sit,  
 Will judge us overgrown with wit.  
 As gifted brethren, preaching by  
 A carnal hour-glass, do imply  
 Illumination can convey  
 Into them what they have to say,  
 But not how much ; so well enough  
 Know you to charge, but not draw off.  
 For who, without a cap and bauble,  
 Having subdued a bear and rabble,  
 And might with honour have come off,  
 Would put it to a second proof ;  
 A politic exploit, right fit  
 For presbyterian zeal and wit.'

Quoth Hudibras, ' That cuckoo's tone,  
 Ralpho, thou always harp'st upon :  
 When thou at any thing wouldest rail,  
 Thou mak'st presbytery thy scale  
 To take the height on't, and explain  
 To what degree it is profane ;

Whats'ever will not with—thy—what d'-ye-call  
Thy light—jump right, thou call'st synodical :  
As if presbyt'ry were a standard  
To size whats'ever's to be slandered.  
Dost not remember how this day  
Thou to my beard was bold to say,  
That thou couldst prove bear-baiting equal  
With synods, orthodox and legal ?  
Do, if thou canst, for I deny't,  
And dare thee to't with all thy light.'

Quoth Ralpho, 'Truly that is no  
Hard matter for a man to do,  
That has but any guts in's brains,  
And could believe it worth his pains ;  
But since you dare and urge me to it,  
You'll find I've light enough to do it.  
Synods are mystical bear-gardens,  
Where elders, deputies, church-wardens,  
And other members of the court,  
Manage the Babylonish sport ;  
For prolocutor, scribe, and bear-ward,  
Do differ only in a mere word.  
Both are but several synagogues  
Of carnal men, and bears and dogs :  
Both antichristian assemblies,  
To mischief bent, as far's in them lies :  
Both stave and tail with fierce contests,  
The one with men, the other beasts.  
The difference is, the one fights with  
The tongue, the other with the teeth ;  
And that they bait but bears in this,  
In th' other, souls and consciences ;  
Where saints themselves are brought to stake  
For gospel-light and conscience' sake ;  
Exposed to scribes and presbyters,  
Instead of mastiff dogs and curs ;  
Than whom they 'ave less humanity,  
For these at souls of men will fly.  
This to the prophet did appear,  
Who in a vision saw a bear,  
Prefiguring the beastly rage  
Of church-rule, in this latter age :

As is demonstrated at full  
By him that baited the pope's bull.  
Bears naturally are beasts of prey,  
That live by rapine ; so do they.  
What are their orders, constitutions,  
Church-censures, curses, absolutions,  
But several mystic chains they make,  
To tie poor Christians to the stake?  
And then set heathen officers,  
Instead of dogs, about their ears.  
For to prohibit and dispense,  
To find out, or to make offence ;  
Of hell and heaven to dispose,  
To play with souls at fast and loose ;  
To set what characters they please,  
And mulcts on sin or godliness ;  
Reduce the church to gospel-order,  
By rapine, sacrilege, and murder ;  
To make presbytery supreme,  
And kings themselves submit to them ;  
And force all people, though against  
Their consciences, to turn saints ;  
Must prove a pretty thriving trade,  
When saints monopolists are made :  
When pious frauds, and holy shifts,  
Are dispensations, and gifts ;  
There godliness becomes mere ware,  
And ev'ry synod but a fair.  
Synods are whelps o' th' Inquisition,  
A mongrel breed of like pernicion,  
And growing up, became the sires  
Of scribes, commissioners, and triers ;  
Whose business is, by cunning sleight,  
To cast a figure for men's light ;  
To find, in lines of beard and face,  
The physiognomy of grace ;  
And by the sound and twang of nose,  
If all be sound within, disclose,  
Free from a crack, or flaw of sinning,  
As men try pipkins by the ringing ;  
By black caps underlaid with white,  
Give certain guess at inward light ;

Which serjeants at the Gospel wear,  
To make the sp'ritual calling clear.  
The handkerchief about the neck—  
Canonical cravat of smeck,  
From whom the institution came,  
When church and state they set on flame,  
And worn by them as badges then  
Of spiritual warfaring-men—  
Judge rightly if regeneration  
Be of the newest cut in fashion :  
Sure 'tis an orthodox opinion,  
That grace is founded in dominion.  
Great piety consists in pride ;  
To rule is to be sanctified :  
To domineer, and to control  
Both o'er the body and the soul,  
Is the most perfect discipline  
Of church-rule, and by right divine.  
Bel and the Dragon's chaplains were  
More moderate than these by far :  
For they, poor knaves, were glad to cheat,  
To get their wives and children meat ;  
But these will not be fobbed off so,  
They must have wealth and power too,  
Or else with blood and desolation,  
They'll tear it out o' th' heart o' th' nation.  
Sure these themselves from primitive  
And heathen priesthood do derive,  
When butchers were the only clerks,  
Elders and presbyters of kirks ;  
Whose directory was to kill ;  
And some believe it is so still.  
The only difference is, that then  
They slaughtered only beasts, now men.  
For then to sacrifice a bullock,  
Or, now and then, a child to Moloch,  
They count a vile abomination,  
But not to slaughter a whole nation.  
Presbytery does but translate  
The papacy to a free state,  
A common-wealth of popery,  
Where every village is a see



As well as Rome, and must maintain  
A tithe-pig metropolitan ;  
Where every presbyter and deacon  
Commands the keys for cheese and bacon ;  
And every hamlet's governèd  
By's holiness, the church's head,  
More haughty and severe in's place,  
Than Gregory and Boniface.  
Such church must, surely, be a monster  
With many heads : for if we conster  
What in th' Apocalypse we find,  
According to th' Apostle's mind,  
'Tis that the Whore of Babylon  
With many heads did ride upon ;  
Which heads denote the sinful tribe  
Of deacon, priest, lay-elder, scribe.  
Lay-elder, Simeon to Levi,  
Whose little finger is as heavy  
As loins of patriarchs, prince-prelate,  
And bishop secular. This zealot  
Is of a mongrel, diverse kind,  
Cleric before, and lay behind ;  
A lawless linsey-woolsey brother,  
Half of one order, half another ;  
A creature of amphibious nature,  
On land a beast, a fish in water ;  
That always preys on grace, or sin ;  
A sheep without, a wolf within.  
This fierce inquisitor has chief  
Dominion over men's belief  
And manners ; can pronounce a saint  
Idolatrous, or ignorant,  
When superciliously he sifts,  
Through coarsest bolter, others' gifts :  
For all men live and judge amiss,  
Whose talents jump not just with his.  
He'll lay on gifts with hands, and place  
On dullest noddle light and grace,  
The new manufacture of the kirk ;  
Whose pastors are but th' handiwork  
Of his mechanic paws, instilling  
Divinity in them by feeling :

From whence they start up chosen vessels,  
Made by contact, as men get measles.  
So cardinals, they say, do grope  
At th' other end the new-made pope.'  
'Hold, hold,' quoth Hudibras, 'soft fire,  
They say, does make sweet malt. Good squire,  
*Festina lente*, not too fast ;  
For haste, the proverb says, makes waste.  
The quirks and cavils thou dost make  
Are false, and built upon mistake :  
And I shall bring you, with your pack  
Of fallacies, t' elenchi back ;  
And put your arguments in mood  
And figure to be understood.  
I'll force you by right ratiocination  
'To leave your vitiligation,  
And make you keep to th' question close,  
And argue *dialecticōs*.  
The question then, to state it first,  
Is, which is better or which worst,  
Synods or bears ? bears I avow  
'To be the worst, and synods thou.  
But to make good th' assertion,  
'Thou say'st th' are really all one.  
If so, not worst ; for if they're *idem*,  
Why then *tantundem dat tantidem*.  
For if they are the same, by course  
Neither is better, neither worse.  
But I deny they are the same,  
More than a maggot and I am.  
That both are *animalia*  
I grant, but not *rationalia* ;  
For though they do agree in kind,  
Specific difference we find.  
And can no more make bears of these,  
Than prove my horse is Socrates.  
That synods are bear-gardens too,  
Thou dost affirm ; but I say, No :  
And thus I prove it, in a word ;  
What's ever assembly's not empowered  
To censure, curse, absolve, and ordain,  
Can be no synod ; but bear-garden

Has no such power, *ergo* 'tis none ;  
 And so thy sophistry's o'erthrown.  
 But yet we are beside the question  
 Which thou didst raise the first contest on ;  
 For that was, whether bears are better  
 Than synod-men ? I say *Negatur*.  
 That bears are beasts, and synods men,  
 Is held by all : they're better then,  
 For bears and dogs on four legs go,  
 As beasts ; but synod-men on two.  
 'Tis true they all have teeth and nails ;  
 But prove that synod-men have tails ;  
 Or that a rugged shaggy fur  
 Grows o'er the hide of presbyter ;  
 Or that his snout and spacious ears  
 Do hold proportion with a bear's.  
 A bear's a savage beast, of all  
 Most ugly and unnatural,  
 Whelped without form, until the dam  
 Has licked it into shape and frame :  
 But all thy light can ne'er evict,  
 That ever synod-man was licked,  
 Or brought to any other fashion  
 Than his own will and inclination.  
 But thou dost further yet in this  
 Oppugn thyself and sense ; that is,  
 Thou wouldst have presbyters to go  
 For bears and dogs, and bear-wards too :  
 A strange chimæra of beasts and men,  
 Made up of pieces het'rogene ;  
 Such as in Nature never met,  
*In eodem subjecto* yet.  
 Thy other arguments are all  
 Supposures hypothetical,  
 That do but beg ; and we may choose  
 Either to grant them or refuse.  
 Much thou hast said, which I know when,  
 And where thou stol'st from other men,  
 Whereby 'tis plain thy light and gifts  
 Are all but plagiary shifts ;  
 And is the same that Raxter said  
 Who, arguing with me, broke my head,

And tore a handful of my beard ;  
The self-same cavils then I heard,  
When b'ing in hot dispute about  
This controversy, we fell out ;  
And what thou know'st I answered then  
Will serve to answer thee again.'

Quoth Ralpho, 'Nothing but th' abuse  
Of human learning you produce ;  
Learning, that cobweb of the brain,  
Profane, erroneous, and vain ;  
A trade of knowledge as replete,  
As others are with fraud and cheat ;  
An art t' incumber gifts and wit,  
And render both for nothing fit ;  
Makes light unactive, dull and troubled,  
Like little David in Saul's doublet :  
A cheat that scholars put upon  
Other men's reason and their own ;  
A sort of error, to ensconce  
Absurdity and ignorance,  
That renders all the avenues  
To truth impervious, and abstruse,  
By making plain things, in debate,  
By art perplexed, and intricate ;  
For nothing goes for sense or light,  
That will not with old rules jump right ;  
As if rules were not in the schools  
Derived from truth, but truth from rules.  
This pagan, heathenish invention  
Is good for nothing but contention.  
For as in sword-and-buckler fight,  
All blows do on the target light ;  
So when men argue, the great'st part  
O' the contest falls on terms of art,  
Until the fustian stuff be spent,  
And then they fall to th' argument.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'Friend Ralph, thou hast  
Out-run the constable at last :  
For thou art fallen on a new  
Dispute, as senseless as untrue,  
But to the former opposite,  
And contrary as black to white ;

Mere *disparata*, that concerning  
Presbytery, this human learning ;  
Two things s' averse, they never yet,  
But in thy rambling fancy, met.  
But I shall take a fit occasion  
T' evince thee by' ratiocination,  
Some other time, in place more proper  
Than this we're in ; therefore let's stop *here*,  
And rest our wearied bones a while,  
Already tired with other toil.'

## PART II.—CANTO I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The knight, being clapped by th' heels in prison,  
The last unhappy expedition,  
Love brings his action on the case,  
And lays it upon Hudibras.  
How he receives the lady's visit,  
And cunningly solicits his suit,  
Which she defers; yet on parole,  
Redeems him from th' enchanted hole.

BUT now, t' observe romantique method,  
Let rusty steel a while be sheathèd;  
And all those harsh and rugged sounds  
Of bastinado, cuts, and wounds,  
Exchanged to love's more gentle style,  
To let our reader breathe a while:  
in which, that we may be as brief as  
is possible, by way of preface.

Is't not enough to make one strange,  
That some men's fancies should ne'er change,  
But make all people do and say  
The same things still the self-same way?  
Some writers make all ladies purloined,  
And knights pursuing like a whirlwind.  
Others make all their knights, in fits  
Of jealousy, to lose their wits;  
Till drawing blood o' th' dames, like witches,  
They're forthwith cured of their caprices.  
Some always thrive in their amours,  
By pulling plasters off their sores;  
As cripples do to get an alms,  
Just do so they, and win their dames.  
Some force whole regions, in despite  
O' geography, to change their site;  
Make former times shake hands with latter,  
And that which was before, come after;

But those that write in rhyme still make  
 The one verse for the other's sake ;  
 For one for sense, and one for rhyme,  
 I think's sufficient at one time.

Be we forget in what sad plight  
 We whilom left the captived knight  
 And pensive squire, both bruised in body,  
 And conjured into safe custody.  
 Tired with dispute, and speaking Latin,  
 As well as basting and bear-baiting,  
 And desperate of any course,  
 To free himself by wit or force,  
 His only solace was, that now  
 His dog-bolt fortune was so low,  
 That either it must quickly end,  
 Or turn about again, and mend ;  
 In which he found th' event, no less  
 Than other times, beside his guess.

There is a tall long-sided dame,—  
 But wondrous light, yclepèd Fame,  
 That like a thin chameleon boards  
 Herself on air, and eats her words ;  
 Upon her shoulders wings she wears  
 Like hanging sleeves, lined through with ears,  
 And eyes, and tongues, as poets list,  
 Made good by deep mythologist :  
 With these she through the welkin flies,  
 And sometimes carries truth, oft lies ;  
 With letters hung, like eastern pigeons,  
 And Mercuries of furthest regions ;  
 Diurnals writ for regulation  
 Of lying, to inform the nation,  
 And by their public use to bring down  
 The rate of whetstones in the kingdom ;  
 About her neck a packet-mail,  
 Fraught with advice, some fresh, some stale,  
 Of men that walked when they were dead,  
 And cows of monsters brought to bed :  
 Of hailstones big as pullets' eggs,  
 And puppies whelped with twice two legs ;  
 A blazing-star seen in the west,  
 By six or seven men at least.

Two trumpets she does sound at once,  
But both of clean contràry tones ;  
But whether both with the same wind,  
Or one before, and one behind,  
We know not, only this can tell,  
Th' one sounds vilely, th' other well ;  
And therefore vulgar authors name  
Th' one Good, th' other Evil Fame.  
This tattling gossip knew too well,  
What mischief Hudibras befel ;  
And straight the spiteful tidings bears  
Of all, to th' unkind widow's ears.  
Democritus ne'er laughed so loud,  
To see bawds carted through the crowd,  
Or funerals with stately pomp,  
March slowly on in solemn dump,  
As she laughed out, until her back,  
As well as sides, was like to crack.  
She vowed she would go see the fight,  
And visit the distressed knight,  
To do the office of a neighbour,  
And be a gossip at his labour ;  
And from his wooden jail, the stocks,  
To set at large his fetter-locks,  
And by exchange, parole, or ransom,  
To free him from th' enchanted mansion.  
This being resolved, she called for hood  
And usher, implements abroad  
Which ladies wear, beside a slender  
Young waiting damsel to attend her.  
*All which appearing, on she went*  
To find the knight, in limbo pent.  
And 'twas not long before she found  
Him, and his stout squire, in the pound ;  
Both coupled in enchanted tether,  
By further leg behind together ;  
For as he sat upon his rump,  
His head, like one in doleful dump,  
Between his knees, his hands applied  
Unto his ears on either side,  
And by him, in another hole,  
Afflicted Ralpho, cheek by *john*



She came upon him in his wooden .  
Magician's circle, on the sudden,  
As spirits do t' a conjurer,  
When in their dreadful shapes th' appear.

No sooner did the knight perceive her,  
But straight he fell into a fever,  
Inflamed all over with disgrace,  
To be seen by her in such a place ;  
Which made him hang his head, and scowl,  
And wink, and goggle like an owl ;  
He felt his brains begin to swim,  
When thus the Dame accosted him.

'This place,' quoth she, 'they say's enchanted,  
And with delinquent spirits haunted ;  
'That here are tied in chains, and scourged,  
Until their guilty crimes be purged :'  
Look, there are two of them appear,  
Like persons I have seen somewhere :  
Some have mistaken blocks and posts  
For spectres, apparitions, ghosts,  
With saucer-eyes, and horns ; and some  
Have heard the devil beat a drum :  
But if our eyes are not false glasses,  
'That give a wrong account of faces,  
'That beard and I should be acquainted,  
Before 'twas conjured and enchanted ;  
For though it be disfigured somewhat,  
As if 't had lately been in combat,  
It did belong to a worthy knight,  
Howe'er this goblin is come by't.'

When Hudibras the Lady heard,  
Discoursing thus upon his beard,  
And speak with such respect and honour,  
Both of the beard and the beard's owner,  
He thought it best to set as good  
A face upon it as he could,  
And thus he spoke : 'Lady, your bright  
And radiant eyes are in the right ;  
'The beard's th' identique beard you knew,  
The same numerically true ;  
Nor is it worn by fiend or elf,  
But its proprietor himself.'

‘O heavens!’ quoth she, ‘can that be true?’  
I do begin to fear ’tis you;  
Not by your individual whiskers,  
But by your dialect and discourse,  
That never spoke to man or beast  
In notions vulgarly expressed:  
But what malignant star, alas!  
Has brought you both to this sad pass?’

Quoth he, ‘The fortune of the war,  
Which I am less afflicted for,  
Than to be seen with beard and face  
By you in such a homely case.’

Quoth she, ‘Those need not be ashamed  
For being honourably maimed;  
It he that is in battle conquered,  
Have any title to his own beard,  
Though yours be sorely lugged and torn,  
It does your visage more adorn  
Than if ’twere pruned, and starched, and landered,  
And cut square by the Russian standard.  
A torn beard’s like a tattered ensign,  
That’s bravest which there are most rents in.  
That petticoat about your shoulders,  
Does not so well become a soldier’s;  
And I’m afraid they are worse handled,  
Although i’ th’ rear, your beard the van led;  
And those uneasy bruises make  
My heart for company to ache,  
To see so worshipful a friend  
I’ th’ pillory set, at the wrong end.’

Quoth Hudibras, ‘This thing called pain,  
Is, as the learned stoics maintain,  
Not bad *simpliciter*, nor good,  
But merely as ’tis understood.  
Sense is deceitful, and may feign  
As well in counterfeiting pain  
As other gross *phenomenas*  
In which it oft mistakes the case.  
But since th’ immortal intellect,  
That’s free from error and defect,  
Whose objects still persist the same,  
Is free from outward bruise or maim,

Which nought external can expose  
 To gross material bangs or blows,  
 It follows we can ne'er be sure  
 Whether we pain or not endure ;  
 And just so far are sore and grieved,  
 As by the fancy is believed.  
 Some have been wounded with conceit,  
 And died of mere opinion straight ;  
 Others, though wounded sore in reason,  
 Felt no contusion, nor discretion.  
 A Saxon Duke did grow so fat,  
 That mice, as histories relate,  
 Ate grots and labyrinths to dwell in  
 His postique parts, without his feeling :  
 Then how is't possible a kick  
 Should e'er reach that way to the quick ?'

Quoth she, ' I grant it is in vain,  
 For one that's basted to feel pain ;  
 Because the pangs his bones endure,  
 Contribute nothing to the cure ;  
 Yet honour hurt, is wont to rage  
 With pain no medicine can assuage '

Quoth he, ' That honour's very squeamish,  
 That takes a basting for a blemish :  
 For what's more honourable than scars,  
 Or skin to tatters rent in wars ?  
 Some have been beaten till they know  
 What wood a cudgel's of by th' blow ;  
 Some kicked, until they can feel whether  
 A shoe be Spanish or neat's leather ;  
 And yet have met, after long running,  
 With some whom they have taught that cunning.  
 The furthest way about, t' o'ercome,  
 In th' end does prove the nearest home.  
 By laws of learned duellists,  
 They that are bruised with wood, or fists,  
 And think one beating may for once  
 Suffice, are cowards and poltroons ;  
 But if they dare engage t' a second,  
 They're stout and gallant fellows reckoned.  
 Th' old Romans freedom did bestow,  
 Our princes worship, with a blow :

King Pyrrhus cured his splenetic  
And testy courtiers with a kick.  
The Negus, when some mighty lord  
Or potentate's to be restored,  
And pardoned for some great offence,  
With which he's willing to dispense,  
First has him laid upon his belly,  
Then beaten back and side, t' a jelly ;  
That done, he rises, humbly bows,  
And gives thanks for the princely blows ;  
Departs not meanly proud, and boasting  
Of his magnificent rib-roasting.  
The beaten soldier proves most manful,  
That, like his sword, endures the anvil,  
And justly's held more formidable,  
The more his valour's malleable :  
But he that fears a bastinado,  
Will run away from his own shadow :  
And though I'm now in durance fast,  
By our own party basely cast,  
Ransom, exchange, parole, refused,  
And worse than by the en'my used ;  
In close *catasta* shut, past hope  
Of wit or valour to elope ;  
As beards, the nearer that they tend  
To th' earth, still grow more reverend ;  
And cannons shoot the higher pitches,  
The lower we let down their breeches ;  
I'll make this low dejected fate  
Advance me to a greater height.'

Quoth she, ' You 'ave almost made m' in love  
With that which did my pity move.  
Great wits and valours, like great states,  
Do sometimes sink with their own weights :  
Th' extremes of glory and of shame,  
Like east and west, become the same.  
No Indian Prince has to his palace  
More followers than a thief to the gallows.  
But if a beating seem so brave,  
What glories must a whipping have ?  
Such great achievements cannot fail  
To cast salt on a woman's tail :

For if I thought your natural talent  
Of passive courage were so gallant,  
As you strain hard to have it though  
I could grow amorous and dote.'

When Hudibras this language heard,  
He pricked up 's ears, and stroked his beard;  
Thought he, this is the lucky hour,  
Wines work when vines are in the flower :  
This crisis then I'll set my rest on,  
And put her boldly to the question.

'Madam, what you would seem to doubt  
Shall be to all the world made out,  
How I've been drubbed, and with what spirit,  
And magnanimity, I bear it;  
And if you doubt it to be true,  
I'll stake myself down against you ;  
And if I fail in love or troth,  
Be you the winner, and take both.'

Quoth she, 'I've heard old cunning stagers  
Say, fools for arguments use wagers.  
And though I praised your valour, yet  
I did not mean to baulk your wit,  
Which, if you have, you must needs know  
What I have told you before now,  
And you b' experiment have proved,  
I cannot love where I'm beloved.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'Tis a caprich  
Beyond th' infliction of a witch ;  
So cheats to play with those still aim,  
That do not understand the game.  
Love in your heart as idly burns,  
As fire in antique Roman urns,  
To warm the dead, and vainly light  
Those only that see nothing by't.  
Have you not power to entertain,  
And render love for love again ?  
As no man can draw in his breath  
At once, and force out air beneath.  
Or do you love yourself so much,  
To bear all rivals else a grutch ?  
What fate can lay a greater curse  
Than you upon yourself would force ;

For wedlock without love, some say,  
Is but a lock without a key.  
It is a kind of rape to marry  
One that neglects, or cares not for ye :  
For what does make it ravishment  
But being against the mind's consent?  
A rape, that is the more inhuman,  
For being acted by a woman.  
Why are you fair, but to entice us  
To love you, that you may despise us?  
But though you cannot love, you say,  
Out of your own fanatic way,  
Why should you not, at least, allow  
Those that love you, to do so too?  
For, as you fly me, and pursue  
Love more averse, so I do you ;  
And am, by your own doctrine, taught  
To practise what you call a fault.'

Quoth she, ' If what you say be true,  
You must fly me, as I do you :  
But 'tis not what we do, but say,  
In love, and preaching, that must sway.'

Quoth he, ' To bid me not to love,  
Is to forbid my pulse to move,  
My beard to grow, my ears to prick up,  
Or, when I'm in a fit, to hiccup :  
Command me to put out the moon,  
And 'twill as easily be done.  
Love's power's too great to be withstood  
By feeble human flesh and blood.  
'Twas he that brought upon his knees  
The hectoring kill-cow Hercules ;  
Reduced his leaguer-lion's skin  
To a petticoat, and made him spin ;  
Seized on his club, and made it dwindle  
To a feeble distaff, and a spindle.'

Quoth she, ' If love have these effects,  
Why is it not forbid our sex?  
Why is't not damned, and interdicted,  
For diabolical and wicked?  
And sung, as out of tune, against,  
As Tuck and Pope are by the saints?

I find, I've greater reason for it,  
Than I believed before t' abhor it.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'These sad effects,  
Spring from your heathenish neglects  
Of love's great power, which he returns  
Upon yourself with equal scorns ;  
And those who worthy lovers slight,  
Plagues with preposterous appetite.'

Quoth she, 'These judgments are severe,  
Yet such as I should rather bear,  
Than trust men with their oaths, or prove  
Their faith and secrecy in love.'

Says he, 'There is as weighty reason  
For secrecy in love, as treason.  
Love is a burglarer, a felon  
That at the windore-eye does steal in,  
'To rob the heart, and with his prey,  
Steals out again a closer way,  
Which whosoever can discover,  
He's sure, as he deserves, to suffer.  
Love is a fire, that burns and sparkles  
In men, as naturally as in charcoals,  
Which sooty chemists stop in holes,  
When out of wood they extract coals ;  
So lovers should their passions choke,  
That though they burn, they may not smoke.  
'Tis like that sturdy thief that stole,  
And dragged beasts backwards into 's hole ;  
So love does lovers, and us men  
Draws by the tails into his den,  
'That no impression may discover, ,  
And trace t' his cave the wary lover.  
But if you doubt I should reveal  
What you entrust me under seal,  
I'll prove myself as close and virtuous  
As your own secretary, Albertus.'

Quoth she, 'I grant you may be close  
In hiding what your aims propose :  
Love-passions are like parables,  
By which men still mean something else :  
Though love be all the world's pretence,  
Money's the mythologique sense,

The real substance of the shadow,  
Which all address and courtship's made to.'

Thought he, I understand your play,  
And how to quit you your own way ;  
He that will win his dame, must do  
As Love does, when he bends his bow ;  
With one hand thrust the lady from,  
• And with the other pull her home.

'I grant,' quoth he, 'wealth is a great  
Provocative to amorous heat :  
It is all philtres and high diet,  
'That makes love rampant, and to fly out :  
'Tis beauty always in the flower,  
That buds and blossoms at fourscore :  
'Tis that by which the sun and moon,  
At their own weapons, are out-done :  
That makes knights-errant fall in trances,  
And lay about 'em in romances ;  
'Tis virtue, wit, and worth, and all  
That men divine and sacred call :  
For what is worth in any thing,  
But so much money as 'twill bring ?  
Or what but riches is there known,  
Which man can solely call his own ;  
In which no creature goes his half,  
Unless it be to squint and laugh ?  
I do confess, with goods and land  
I'd have a wife at second hand ;  
And such you are : nor is't your person  
My stomach's set so sharp and fierce on ;  
But 'tis your better part, your riches,  
That my enamoured heart bewitches :  
Let me your fortune but possess,  
And settle your person how you please ;  
Or make it o'er in trust to the devil,  
You'll find me reasonable and civil.'

Quoth she, 'I like this plainness better  
Than false-mock passion, speech, or letter,  
Or any feat of quailm or swooning,  
But hanging of yourself, or drowning ;  
Your only way with me to break  
Your mind, is breaking of your neck :



For as when merchants break, o'erthrown  
 Like nine-pins, they strike others down ;  
 So that would break my heart ; which done,  
 My tempting fortune is your own.  
 These are but trifles ; every lover  
 Will damn himself over and over,  
 And greater matters undertake  
 For a less worthy mistress' sake :  
 Yet they're the only ways to prove  
 Th' unfeigned realities of love ;  
 For he that hangs, or beats out 's brains,  
 The devil's in him if he feigns.'

Quoth Hudibras, ' This way's too rough  
 For mere experiment and proof ;  
 It is no jesting, trivial matter,  
 To swing i' th' air, or dounce in water,  
 And, like a water-witch, try love ;  
 That's to destroy, and not to prove ;  
 As if a man should be dissected,  
 To find what part is disaffected :  
 Your better way is to make over,  
 In trust, your fortune to your lover :  
 Trust is a trial ; if it break,  
 'Tis not so desperate as a neck :  
 Beside, th' experiment's more certain ;  
 Men venture necks to gain a fortune :  
 The soldier does it every day,  
 Eight to the week, for sixpence pay ;  
 Your pettifoggers damn their souls,  
 To share with knaves, in cheating fools ;  
 And merchants, venturing through the main,  
 Slight pirates, rocks, and horns, for gain :  
 This is the way I advise you to,  
 Trust me, and see what I will do.'

Quoth she, ' I should be loth to run  
 Myself all th' hazard, and you none ;  
 Which must be done, unless some deed  
 Of yours aforesaid do precede :  
 Give but yourself one gentle swing,  
 For trial, and I'll cut the string ;  
 Or give that reverend head a maul,  
 Or two, or three, against a wall ;

'To show you are a man of mettle,  
And I'll engage myself to settle.'

Quoth he, 'My head's not made of brass,  
As Friar Bacon's noddle was,  
Nor, like the Indian's skull, so tough,  
That, authors say, 'twas musket proof ;  
As it had need to be to enter,  
As yet, on any new adventure ;  
You see what bangs it has endured,  
That would, before new feats, be cured :  
But if that's all you stand upon,  
Here strike me luck, it shall be done.'

Quoth she, 'The matter's not so far gone  
As you suppose ; two words t' a bargain ;  
'That may be done, and time enough,  
When you have given downright proof ;  
And yet 'tis no fantastic pique  
I have to love, nor coy dislike ;  
'Tis no implicit, nice aversion  
'T' your conversation, mien, or person ;  
But a just fear, lest you should prove  
False and perfidious in love ;  
For if I thought you could be true,  
I could love twice as much as you.'

Quoth he, 'My faith as adamant  
As chains of destiny, I'll maintain ;  
'True as Apollo ever spoke,  
Or oracle from heart of oak ;  
And if you'll give my flame but vent,  
Now in close hugger-mugger pent,  
And shine upon me but benignly,  
With that one, and that other pigney,  
The sun and day shall sooner part,  
Than love, or you, shake off my heart ;  
The sun that shall no more dispense  
His own, but your bright influence ;  
I'll carve your name on barks of trees,  
With true-love-knots, and flourishes ;  
That shall infuse eternal spring,  
And everlasting flourishing ;  
Drink every letter on't in stum,  
And make it brisk champagne become ;

Where'er you tread, your foot shall set  
The primrose and the violet ;  
All spices, perfumes, and sweet powders,  
Shall borrow from your breath their odours ;  
Nature her charter shall renew,  
And take all lives of things from you ;  
'The world depend upon your eye,  
And when you frown upon it, die.  
Only our loves shall still survive,  
New worlds and natures to outlive ;  
And, like to herald's moons, remain  
All crescents, without change or wane.'

'Hold, hold,' quoth she, 'no more of *this*,  
Sir Knight, you take your aim amiss ;  
For you will find it a hard chapter,  
To catch me with poetic rapture,  
In which your mastery of art  
Doth show itself, and not your heart ;  
Nor will you raise in mine combustion,  
By dint of high heroic fustian :  
She that with poetry is won,  
Is but a desk to write upon ;  
And what men say of her, they mean  
No more than on the thing they lean.  
Some with Arabian spices strive  
T' embalm her cruelly alive ;  
Or season her, as French cooks use  
Their *haut-gouts*, *bouillions*, or *ragouts* ;  
Use her so barbarously ill,  
To grind her lips upon a mill,  
Until the *facet doublet* doth  
Fit their rhymes rather than her mouth ;  
Her mouth compared t' an oyster's, with  
A row of pearl in't, 'stead of teeth ;  
Others make posies of her cheeks,  
Where red and whitest colours mix ;  
In which the lily and the rose,  
For Indian lake and ceruse goes.  
'The sun and moon, by her bright eyes,  
Eclipsed and darkened in the skies,  
Are but black patches, that she wears,  
Cut into suns, and moons, and stars ;

By which astrologers, as well  
As those in heaven above, can tell  
What strange events they do foreshow,  
Unto her under-world below.  
Her voice, the music of the spheres,  
So loud, it deafens mortals' ears,  
As wise philosophers have thought,  
And that's the cause we hear it not,  
'This has been done by some, who those  
Th' adored in rhyme, would kill in prose ;  
And in those ribbons would have hung,  
Of which melodiously they sung ;  
'That have the hard fate to write best,  
Of those still that deserve it least ;  
It matters not, how false or forced,  
So the best things be said o' th' worst ;  
It goes for nothing when 'tis said,  
Only the arrow's drawn to th' head,  
Whether it be a swan or goose  
'They level at ; so shepherds use  
'To set the same mark on the hip  
Both of their sound and rotten sheep :  
For wits that carry low or wide,  
Must be aimed higher, or beside  
The mark, which else they ne'er come nigh,  
But when they take their aim awry.  
But I do wonder you should chuse  
This way t' attack me with your muse,  
As one cut out to pass your tricks on,  
With fulhams of poetic fiction :  
I rather hoped I should no more  
Hear from you o' th' gallanting score :  
For hard dry-bastings used to prove  
The readiest remedies of love,  
Next a dry-diet ; but if those fail,  
Yet this uneasy loop-holed jail,  
In which ye're hampered by the fetlock,  
Cannot but put y' in mind of wedlock ;  
Wedlock, that's worse than any hole here,  
If that may serve you for a cooler  
T' allay your mettle, all agog  
Upon a wife, the heavier clog.

Nor rather thank your gentler fate,  
That, for a bruised or broken pate,  
Has freed you from those knobs that grow  
Much harder on the married brow :  
But if no dread can cool your courage,  
From venturing on that dragon, marriage ;  
Yet give me quarter, and advance  
To nobler aims your puissance ;  
Level at beauty and at wit ;  
'The fairest mark is easiest hit.'

Quoth Hudibras, ' I am beforehand  
In that already, with your command ;  
For where does beauty and high wit  
But in your constellation, meet ? '

Quoth she, ' What does a match imply,  
But likeness and equality ?  
I know you cannot think me fit  
To be th' yoke-fellow of your wit ;  
Nor take one of so mean deserts,  
To be the partner of your parts :  
A grace which, if I could believe,  
I've not the conscience to receive.'

' That conscience,' quoth Hudibras,  
' Is misinformed ; I'll state the case.  
A man may be a legal donor  
Of any thing whereof he's owner,  
And may confer it where he lists,  
I' th' judgment of all casuists :  
Then wit, and parts, and valour may  
Be alienated, and made away,  
By those that are proprietors,  
As I may give or sell my horse.'

Quoth she, ' I grant the case is true,  
And proper 'twixt your horse and you ;  
But whether I may take, as well  
As you may give away, or sell ?  
Buyers, you know, are bid beware ;  
And worse than thieves receivers are.  
How shall I answer hue and cry,  
For a roan-gelding, twelve hands high,  
All spurred and switched, a lock on 's hoof,  
A sorrel mane ? Can I bring proof

Where, when, by whom, and what y' were sold for,  
And in the open market tolled for?  
Or, should I take you for a stray,  
You must be kept a year and day,  
Ere I can own you, here i' th' pound,  
Where, if ye're sought, you may be found ;  
And in the mean time I must pay  
For all your provender and hay.'

Quoth he, 'It stands me much upon  
T' enervate this objection.  
Look on this beard, and tell me whether  
Eunuchs wear such, or geldings either?  
Next it appears, I am no horse,  
That I can argue and discourse,  
Have but two legs, and ne'er a tail.'

Quoth she, 'That nothing will avail ;  
For some philosophers of late here,  
Write men have four legs by nature,  
And that 'tis custom makes them go  
Erroneously upon but two ;  
As 'twas in Germany made good,  
B' a boy that lost himself in a wood ;  
And growing down t' a man, was wont  
With wolves upon all four to hunt.  
As for your reasons drawn from tails,  
We cannot say they're true or false,  
Till you explain yourself, and show  
B' experiment 'tis so or no.'

Quoth he, 'If you'll join issue on't,  
I'll give you sat'sfact'ry account ;  
So you will promise, if you lose,  
To settle all, and be my spouse.'

'That never shall be done,' quoth she,  
'To one that wants a tail, by me ;  
For tails by nature sure were meant,  
As well as beards, for ornament ;  
And, though the vulgar count them homely,  
In men or beast they are so comely,  
So *gentee*, *alamode*, and handsome,  
I'll never marry man that wants one ;  
And till you can demonstrate plain,  
You have one equal to your mane,

I'll be torn piece-meal by a horse,  
Ere I'll take you for better or worse.  
The Prince of Cambay's daily food  
Is asp, and basilisk, and toad,  
Which makes him have so strong a breath,  
Each night he stinks a queen to death ;  
Yet I shall rather lie in 's arms  
Than yours, on any other terms.'

Quoth he, 'What nature can afford  
I shall produce, upon my word ;  
And if she ever gave that boon  
To man, I'll prove that I have one :  
I mean by postulate illation,  
When you shall offer just occasion ;  
But since ye 'ave yet denied to give  
My heart, your prisoner, a reprieve,  
But made it sink down to my heel,  
Let that at least your pity feel ;  
And for the sufferings of your martyr,  
Give its poor entertainer quarter ;  
And by discharge, or mainprize, grant  
Delivery from this base restraint.'

Quoth she, 'I grieve to see your leg  
Stuck in a hole here like a peg,  
And if I knew which way to do't,  
Your honour safe, I'd let you out.  
That dames by jail-delivery  
Of errant knights have been set free,  
When by enchantment they have been,  
And sometimes for it, too, laid in,  
Is that which knights are bound to do  
By order, oaths, and honour too ; ,  
For what are they renowned and famous else,  
But aiding of distressed damosels ?  
But for a lady, no ways errant,  
To free a knight, we have no warrant  
In any authentical romance,  
Or classic author yet of France ;  
And I'd be loth to have you break  
An ancient custom for a weak,  
Or innovation introduce.  
In place of things of antique use,

To free your heels by any course  
That might b' unwholesome to your spurs :  
Which if I should consent unto,  
It is not in my power to do ;  
For 'tis a service must be done ye  
With solemn previous ceremony ;  
Which always has been used t' untie  
The charms of those who here do lie :  
For as the ancients heretofore  
To honour's temple had no door,  
But that which thorough virtue's lay,  
So from this dungeon there's no way  
To honoured freedom, but by passing  
That other virtuous school of lashing,  
Where knights are kept in narrow lists,  
With wooden lockets 'bout their wrists ;  
In which they for a while are tenants,  
And for their ladies suffer penance :  
Whipping, that's virtue's governess,  
Tutress of arts and sciences ;  
That mends the gross mistakes of nature,  
And puts new life into dull matter ;  
That lays foundation for renown,  
And all the honours of the gown.  
This suffered, they are set at large,  
And freed with honourable discharge ;  
Then, in their robes, the penitentials  
Are straight presented with credentials,  
And in their way attended on  
By magistrates of every town ;  
And, all respect and charges paid,  
They're to their ancient seats conveyed.  
Now if you'll venture, for my sake,  
To try the toughness of your back,  
And suffer, as the rest have done,  
The laying of a whipping on,  
And may you prosper in your suit,  
As you with equal vigour do't,  
I here engage to be your bail,  
And free you from th' unknightly jail.  
But since our sex's modesty  
Will not allow I should be by,



Bring me, on oath, a fair account,  
And honour too, when you have don't ;  
And I'll admit you to the place  
You claim as due in my good grace.  
If matrimony and hanging go  
By dest'ny, why not whipping too ?  
What medicine else can cure the fits  
Of lovers, when they lose their wits ?  
Love is a boy, by poets styled,  
Then spare the rod, and spoil the child ;  
A Persian emperor whipped his grannam  
The sea, his mother Venus came on ;  
And hence some reverend men approve  
Of rosemary in making love.  
As skilful coopers hoop their tubs  
With Lydian and with Phrygian dubs,  
Why may not whipping have as good  
A grace, performed in time and mood,  
With comely movement, and by art,  
Raise passion in a lady's heart ?  
It is an easier way to make  
Love by, than that which many take.  
Who would not rather suffer whipping,  
Than swallow toasts of bits of ribbon ?  
Make wicked verses, traits, and faces,  
And spell names over, with beer-glasses ?  
Be under vows to hang and die  
Love's sacrifice, and all a lie ?  
With China-oranges and tarts,  
And whining plays, lay baits for hearts ?  
Bribe chambermaids with love and money,  
To break no roguish jests upon ye ?  
For lilies limned on cheeks, and roses  
With painted perfumes, hazard noses ?  
Or, venturing to be brisk and wanton,  
Do penance in a paper lantern ?  
All this you may compound for now,  
By suffering what I offer you ;  
Which is no more than has been done  
By knights for ladies long ago.  
Did not the great La Mancha do so  
For the Infanta Del Toboso ?

Did not th' illustrious Bassa make  
Himself a slave for Misse's sake?  
With thong of bull's hide, for her love,  
Was tawed as gentle as a glove?  
Was not young Florio sent, to cool  
His flame for Biancaflore, to school,  
Where pedant made his pathic bum  
For her sake suffer martyrdom?  
Did not a certain lady whip,  
Of late, her husband's own lordship?  
And though a grandee of the house,  
Clawed him with fundamental blows;  
'Tied him stark-naked to a bed-post,  
And firked his hide, as if she 'ad rid post;  
And after in the sessions court,  
Where whipping's judged, had honour for't?  
'This swear you will perform, and then  
I'll set you from th' enchanted den,  
And the magician's circle, clear.'

Quoth he, 'I do profess and swear,  
And will perform what you enjoyn,  
Or may I never see you mine.'

'Amen,' quoth she, then turned about,  
And bid her squire let him out.  
But ere an artist could be found  
T' undo the charms another bound,  
The sun grew low, and left the skies,  
Put down, some write, by ladies' eyes;  
The moon pulled off her veil of light,  
That hides her face by day from sight,  
Mysterious veil, of brightness made,  
'That's both her lustre and her shade,  
And in the night as freely shone,  
As if her rays had been her own:  
For darkness is the proper sphere  
Where all false glories use t' appear.  
The twinkling stars began to muster,  
And glitter with their borrowed lustre,  
While sleep the wearied world relieved,  
By counterfeiting death revived.  
His whipping penance, till the morn,  
Our votary thought it best t' adjourn,

And not to carry on a work  
Of such importance in the dark,  
With erring haste, but rather stay,  
And do't in th' open face of day ;  
And in the mean time go in quest  
Of next retreat to take his rest.

## CANTO II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The knight and squire in hot dispute,  
Within an ace of falling out,  
Are parted with a sudden fright  
Of strange alarm, and stranger sight ;  
With which adventuring to stickle,  
They're sent away in nasty pickle.

'Tis strange how some men's tempers suit,  
Like bet and brandy, with dispute,  
That for their own opinions stand fast,  
Only to have them clawed and canvassed ;  
That keep their consciences in cases,  
As fiddlers do their crowds and bases,  
Ne'er to be used, but when they're bent  
To play a fit for argument ;  
Make true and false, unjust and just,  
Of no use but to be discussed ;  
Dispute and set a paradox,  
Like a strait boot, upon the stocks,  
And stretch it more unmercifully  
Than Helmont, Montaigne, White, or Tully.  
So th' ancient Stoics, in their porch,  
With fierce dispute maintained their church,  
Beat out their brains in fight and study,  
To prove that virtue is a body ;  
That *bonum* is an animal,  
Made good with stout polemic brawl ;  
In which some hundreds on the place  
Were slain outright, and many a face  
Retrenched of nose, and eyes, and beard,  
To maintain what their sect averred.  
All which the knight, and squire, in wrath,  
Had like t' have suffer'd for their faith ;  
Each striving to make good his own,  
As by the sequel shall be shown.

The sun had long since, in the lap  
Of Thetis, taken out his nap,  
And like a lobster boiled, the morn  
From black to red began to turn ;  
When Hudibras, whom thoughts and aching  
'Twixt sleeping kept, all night, and waking,  
Began to rub his drowsy eyes,  
And from his couch prepared to rise ;  
Resolving to despatch the deed  
He vowed to do with trusty speed :  
But first, with knocking loud and bawling,  
He roused the squire, in truckle lolling :  
And after many circumstances,  
Which vulgar authors in romances,  
Do use to spend their time and wits on,  
'To make impertinent description,  
'They got, with much ado, to horse,  
And to the castle bent their course,  
In which he to the dame before  
To suffer whipping-duty swore :  
Where now arrived, and half unharnessed,  
'To carry on the work in earnest,  
He stopped and paused upon the sudden,  
And with a serious forehead plodding,  
Sprung a new scruple in his head,  
Which first he scratched, and after said :  
    ' Whether it be direct infringing  
An oath, if I should wave this swinging,  
And what I've sworn to bear, forbear,  
And so b' equivocation swear ;  
Or whether 't be a lesser sin  
'To be forsworn, than act the thing,  
Are deep and subtle points, which must,  
'To inform my conscience, be discussed ;  
In which to err a tittle may  
'To errors infinite make way :  
And therefore I desire to know  
Thy judgment, ere we further go.'  
Quoth Ralpho, ' Since you do enjoin't,  
I shall enlarge upon the point ;  
And, for my own part, do not doubt  
'Th' affirmative may be made out.

But first, to state the case aright,  
For best advantage of our light ;  
And thus 'tis : Whether 't be a sin  
To claw and curry your own skin,  
Greater or less than to forbear,  
And that you are forsworn forswear.  
But first, o' th' first : The inward man,  
And outward, like a clan and clan,  
Have always been at daggers-drawing,  
And one another clapper-clawing ;  
Not that they really cuff or fence,  
But in a spiritual mystic sense ;  
Which to mistake, and make them squabble  
In literal fray, 's abominable ;  
'Tis heathenish, in frequent use,  
With Pagans and apostate Jews,  
To offer sacrifice of bridewells,  
Like modern Indians to their idols ;  
And mongrel Christians of our times,  
That expiate less with greater crimes,  
And call the foul abomination,  
Contrition and mortification.  
Is't not enough we're bruised and kickèd,  
With sinful members of the wicked ;  
Our vessels, that are sanctified,  
Profaned, and curried back and side ;  
But we must claw ourselves with shameful  
And heathen stripes, by their example ?  
Which, were there nothing to forbid it,  
Is impious, because they did it :  
This therefore may be justly reckoned  
A heinous sin. Now to the second ;  
That saints may claim a dispensation  
To swear and forswear on occasion,  
I doubt not but it will appear  
With pregnant light : the point is clear.  
Oaths are but words, and words but wind,  
Too feeble implements to bind ;  
And hold with deeds proportion, so  
As shadows to a substance do.  
Then when they strive for place, 'tis fit  
The weaker v s el should submit.

Although your church be opposite  
To ours, as Black-friars are to White,  
In rule and order, yet I grant  
You are a reformato saint ;  
And what the saints do claim as due,  
You may pretend a title to :  
But saints, whom oaths and vows oblige,  
Know little of their privilege ;  
Further, I mean, than carrying on  
Some self-advantage of their own :  
For if the devil, to serve his turn,  
Can tell truth ; why the saints should scorn,  
When it serves theirs, to swear and lie,  
I think there's little reason why :  
Else h' has a greater power than they,  
Which 'twere impiety to say.  
We 're not commanded to forbear,  
Indefinitely, at all to swear ;  
But to swear idly, and in vain,  
Without self-interest or gain ;  
For breaking of an oath and lying,  
Is but a kind of self-denying,  
A saint-like virtue ; and from hence  
Some have broke oaths by Providence :  
Some, to the glory of the Lord,  
Perjured themselves, and broke their word :  
And this the constant rule and practice  
Of all our late apostles' acts is.  
Was not the Cause at first begun  
With perjury, and carried on ?  
Was there an oath the godly took,  
But in due time and place they 'broke ?  
Did we not bring our oaths in first,  
Before our plate, to have them burst,  
And cast in fitter models, for  
The present use of church and war ?  
Did not our worthies of the house,  
Before they broke the peace, break vows ?  
For having freed us first from both  
Th' allegiance and suprem'cy oath,  
Did they not next compel the nation  
To take, and break the protestation ?

To swear, and after to recant,  
The solemn league and covenant ?  
To take th' engagement, and disclaim it,  
Enforced by those who first did frame it ?  
Did they not swear, at first, to fight  
For the king's safety, and his right ?  
And after marched to find him out,  
And charged him home with horse and foot ?  
And yet still had the confidence  
To swear it was in his defence ?  
Did they not swear to live and die  
With Essex, and straight laid him by ?  
If that were all, for some have sworn  
As false as they, if they did no more.  
Did they not swear to maintain law,  
In which that swearing made a flaw ?  
For protestant religion vow,  
'That did that vowing disallow ?  
For privilege of parliament,  
In which that swearing made a rent ?  
And since, of all the three, not one  
Is left in being, 'tis well known.  
Did they not swear, in express words,  
To prop and back the House of Lords ?  
And after turned out the whole houseful  
Of peers, as dangerous and unuseful.  
So Cromwell, with deep oaths and vows,  
Swore all the Commons out o' th' house ;  
Vowed that the red-coats would disband,  
Ay, marry would they, at their command ;  
And trolled them on, and swore, and swore,  
Till th' army turned them out of door.  
This tells us plainly what they thought,  
That oaths and swearing go for nought,  
And that by them th' were only meant  
To serve for an expedient.  
What was the public faith found out for,  
But to slur men of what they fought for ?  
The public faith, which every one  
Is bound t' observe, yet kept by none ;  
And if that go for nothing, why  
Should private faith have such a tie ?



Oaths were not purposed, more than law,  
'To keep the good and just in awe,  
But to confine the bad and sinful,  
Like mortal cattle in a pinfold.  
A saint's of th' heavenly realm a peer ;  
And as no peer is bound to swear,  
But on the gospel of his honour,  
Of which he may dispose as owner,  
It follows, though the thing be forgery,  
And false, th' affirm it is no perjury,  
But a mere ceremony, and a breach  
Of nothing, but a form of speech ;  
And goes for no more when 'tis took,  
Than mere saluting of the book.  
Suppose the Scriptures are of force,  
'They're but commissions of course,  
And saints have freedom to digress,  
And vary from 'em, as they please ;  
Or misinterpret them by private  
Instructions, to all aims they drive at.  
'Then why should we ourselves abridge,  
And curtail our own privilege ?  
Quakers that, like to lanterns bear  
'Their light within 'em, will not swear ;  
'Their gospel is an accident,  
By which they construe conscience,  
And hold no sin so deeply red,  
As that of breaking Priscian's head,  
The head and founder of their order,  
That stirring hats held worse than murder.  
These thinking they're obliged to troth  
In swearing, will not take an oath :  
Like mules, who if they 'ave not their will  
'To keep their own pace, stand stock-still ;  
But they are weak, and little know  
What free-born consciences may do.  
'Tis the temptation of the devil  
'That makes all human actions evil ;  
For saints may do the same things by  
The spirit, in sincerity,  
Which other men are tempted to,  
And at the devil's instance do ;

And yet the actions be contràry,  
 Just as the saints and wicked vary.  
 For as on land there is no beast  
 But in some fish at sea's expressed ;  
 So in the wicked there's no vice,  
 Of which the saints have not a spice ;  
 And yet that thing that's pious in  
 The one, in th' other is a sin.  
 Is't not ridiculous and nonsense,  
 A saint should be a slave to conscience,  
 That ought to be above such fancies,  
 As far as above ordinances ?  
 She's of the wicked, as I guess,  
 B' her looks, her language, and her dress :  
 And though, like constables, we search  
 For false wares one another's church ;  
 Yet all of us hold this for true,  
 No faith is to the wicked due.  
 The truth is precious and divine,  
 Too rich a pearl for carnal swine.'

Quoth Hudibras, ' All this is true ;  
 Yet 'tis not fit that all men knew  
 Those mysteries and revelations ;  
 And therefore topical evasions  
 Of subtle turns, and shifts of sense,  
 Serve best with th' wicked for pretence,  
 Such as the learned Jesuits use,  
 And Presbyterians, for excuse  
 Against the Protestants, when th' happen  
 To find their churches taken napping :  
 • As thus ; A breach of oath is duple,  
 And either way admits a scruple,  
 And may be, *ex parte* of the maker,  
 More criminal than th' injured taker ;  
 For he that strains too far a vow,  
 Will break it, like an o'er-bent bow :  
 And he that made and forced it, broke it,  
 Not he that for convenience took it.  
 A broken oath 's, *quatenus* oath,  
 As sound t' all purposes of troth,  
 As broken laws are ne'er the worse,  
 Nay, till they're broken have no force

What's justice to a man, or laws,  
That never comes within their claws ?  
They have no power, but to admonish ;  
Cannot control, coerce, or punish,  
Until they're broken, and then touch  
Those only that do make them such.  
Beside, no engagement is allowed  
By men in prison made, for good ;  
For when they're set at liberty,  
They're from th' engagement too set free.  
The rabbins write, when any Jew  
Did make to God or man a vow,  
Which afterwards he found untoward,  
And stubborn to be kept, or too hard,  
Any three other Jews o' th' nation  
Might free him from the obligation ;  
And have not two saints power to use  
A greater privilege than three Jews ?  
The court of conscience, which in man  
Should be supreme and sovereign,  
Is't fit should be subordinate  
To ev'ry petty court i' the state,  
And have less power than the lesser,  
To deal with perjury at pleasure ?  
Have its proceedings disallowed, or  
Allowed, at fancy of pie-powder ?  
Tell all it does, or does not know,  
For swearing *ex officio* ?  
Be forced t' impeach a broken hedge,  
And pigs unringed at *vis. franc.* pledge ?  
Discover thieves, and bawds, recusants,  
Priests, witches, eaves-droppers, and nuisance ;  
Tell who did play at games unlawful,  
And who filled pots of ale but half-full ;  
And have no power at all, nor shift,  
To help itself at a dead lift ?  
Why should not conscience have vacation  
As well as other courts o' th' nation ?  
Have equal power to adjourn,  
Appoint appearance and return ?  
And make as nice distinctions serve  
To split a case, as those that carve,

Invoking cuckolds' names, hit joints?  
Why should not tricks as slight, do points?  
Is not th' high-court of justice sworn  
To judge that law that serves their turn?  
Make their own jealousies high-treason,  
And fix them whomso'er they please on?  
Cannot the learned counsel there  
Make laws in any shape appear?  
Mould 'em as witches do their clay,  
When they make pictures to destroy?  
And vex them into any form  
That fits their purpose to do harm?  
Rack 'em until they do confess,  
Impeach of treason whom you please,  
And most perfidiously condemn  
Those that engaged their lives for them?  
And yet do nothing in their own sense,  
But what they ought by oath and conscience.  
Can they not juggle, and with slight  
Conveyance play with wrong and right;  
And sell their blasts of wind as dear,  
As Lapland witches bottled air?  
Will not fear, favour, bribe, and grudge,  
The same case several ways adjudge?  
As seamen with the self-same gale,  
Will several different courses sail;  
As when the sea breaks o'er its bounds,  
And overflows the level grounds,  
Those banks and dams, that, like a screen,  
Did keep it out, now keep it in;  
So when tyrann'cal usurpation  
Invades the freedom of a nation,  
The laws o' th' land, that were intended  
To keep it out, are made defend it.  
Does not in chancery every man swear  
What makes best for him in his answer?  
Is not the winding up witnesses,  
And nicking, more than half the business?  
For witnesses, like watches, go  
Just as they're set, too fast or slow;  
And where in conscience they're strait-laced,  
'Tis ten to one that side is cast.

Do not your juries give their verdict  
As if they felt the cause, not heard it?  
And as they please, make matter o' fact  
Run all on one side, as they're packed?  
Nature has made man's breast no windores,  
To publish what he does within doors;  
Nor what dark secrets there inhabit,  
Unless his own rash folly blab it.  
If oaths can do a man no good  
In his own business, why they should  
In other matters do him hurt,  
I think there's little reason for't.  
He that imposes an oath makes it,  
Not he that for convenience takes it:  
Then how can any man be said  
To break an oath he never made?  
These reasons may perhaps look oddly  
To th' wicked, though they evince the godly;  
But if they will not serve to clear  
My honour, I am ne'er the near.  
Honour is like that glassy bubble,  
That finds philosophers such trouble;  
Whose least part cracked, the whole does fly,  
And wits are cracked to find out why.'

Quoth Ralpho, 'Honour's but a word  
To swear by only in a lord:  
In other men 'tis but a puff  
To vapour with, instead of proof;  
'That, like a wen, looks big and swells,  
Insenseless, and just nothing else.'

'Let it,' quoth he, 'be what it will,  
It has the world's opinion still.'

But as men are not wise that run  
The slightest hazard they may shun,  
'There may a medium be found out  
To clear to all the world the doubt;  
And that is, if a man may do't,  
By proxy whipped, or substitute.'

'Though nice and dark the point appear,'  
Quoth Ralph, 'it may hold up and clear.  
'That sinners may supply the place  
Of suffering saints, is a plain case.'

Justice gives sentence, many times,  
On one man for another's crimes.  
Our brethren of New England use  
Choice malefactors to excuse,  
And hang the guiltless in their stead,  
Of whom the churches have less need ;  
As lately 't happened : In a town  
'There lived a cobbler, and but one,  
'That out of doctrine could cut use,  
And mend men's lives as well as shoes.  
'This precious brother having slain,  
In times of peace, an Indian,  
Not out of malice, but mere zeal,  
Because he was an infidel,  
'The mighty 'Tottipottymoy  
Sent to our elders an envoy,  
Complaining sorely of the breach  
Of league, held forth by brother Patch,  
Against the articles in force  
Between both churches, his and ours ;  
For which he craved the saints to render  
Into his hands, or hang, th' offender :  
But they maturely having weighed  
They had no more but him o' th' trade,  
A man that served them in a double  
Capacity, to teach and cobbler,  
Resolved to spare him ; yet to do  
The Indian Hoghan Moghan too  
Impartial justice, in his stead did  
Hang an old weaver that was bed-rid.  
Then wherefore may not you be skipped,  
And in your room another whipped ?  
For all philosophers, but the sceptic,  
Hold whipping may be sympathetic.'

'It is enough,' quoth Hudibras,  
'Thou hast resolved, and cleared the case ;  
And canst, in conscience, not refuse,  
From thy own doctrine, to raise use.  
I know thou wilt not, for my sake,  
Be tender-conscience'd of thy back :  
'Then strip thee of thy carnal jerkin,  
And give thy outward-fellow a firkin ;

For when thy vessel is new hooped,  
All leaks of sinning will be stopped.'

Quoth Ralpho, 'You mistake the matter,  
For in all scruples of this nature,  
No man includes himself, nor turns  
The point upon his own concerns.  
As no man of his own self catches  
The itch, or amorous French achès ;  
So no man does himself convince,  
By his own doctrine, of his sins :  
And though all cry down self, none means  
His own self in a literal sense :  
Besides, it is not only foppish,  
But vile, idolatrous, and popish,  
For one man out of his own skin  
To frisk and whip another's sin ;  
As pedants out of school-boys' breeches  
Do claw and curry their own itches  
But in this case it is profane,  
And sinful too, because in vain ;  
For we must take our oaths upon it  
You did the deed, when I have done it.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'That's answered soon ;  
Give us the whip, we'll lay it on.'

Quoth Ralpho, 'That we may swear true,  
'T were properer that I whipped you ;  
For when with your consent 'tis done,  
The act is really your own.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'It is in vain,  
I see, to argue 'gainst the grain ;  
Or, like the stars, incline men to  
What they're averse themselves to do :  
For when disputes are wearied out,  
'Tis interest still resolves the doubt :  
But since no reason can confute ye,  
I'll try to force you to your duty ;  
For so it is, howe'er you mince it,  
As, e'er we part, I shall evince it,  
And curry, if you stand out, whether  
You will or no, your stubborn leather.  
Canst thou refuse to bear thy part  
I' th' public work, base as thou art ?

To higgle thus, for a few blows,  
To gain thy knight an op'lent spouse,  
Whose wealth his bowels yearn to purchase,  
Merely for th' interest of the churches?  
And when he has it in his claws,  
Mill not be hide-bound to the cause;  
Nor shalt thou find him a curmudgeon,  
If thou despatch it without grudging:  
If not, resolve, before we go,  
That you and I must pull a crow.'  
'Ye 'ad best,' quoth Ralpho, 'as the ancients  
Say wisely, Have a care o' th' main chance,  
And, Look before you ere you leap;  
For, As you sow, ye're like to reap:  
And were y' as good as George a Green,  
I should make bold to turn again;  
Nor am I doubtful of the issue  
In a just quarrel, and mine is so.  
Is't fitting for a man of honour  
To whip the saints, like Bishop Bonner?  
A knight t' usurp the beadle's office,  
For which y' are like to raise brave trophies?  
But I advise you, not for fear,  
But for your own sake, to forbear,  
And for the churches, which may chance,  
From hence, to spring a variance,  
And raise among themselves new scruples,  
Whom common danger hardly couples.  
Remember how in arms and politics  
We still have worsted all your holy tricks;  
Trepanned your party with intrigue,  
And took your grandees down a peg;  
New-modelled th' army, and cashiered  
All that to Legion Smec adhered;  
Made a mere utensil o' your church,  
And after left it in the lurch;  
A scaffold to build up our own,  
And when w' had done with 't pulled it down;  
O'er-reached your rabbins of the synod,  
And snapped their canons with a why-not:  
Grave synod-men, that were revered  
For solid face, and depth of beard,



Their classic model proved a maggot,  
Their direct'ry an Indian pagod ;  
And drowned their discipline like a kitten,  
On which they'd been so long a sitting ;  
Decried it as a holy cheat,  
Grown out of date, and obsolete,  
And all the saints of the first grass,  
As casting foals of Balaam's ass.'

At this the knight grew high in chafe,  
And, staring furiously on Ralph,  
He trembled and looked pale with ire,  
Like ashes first, then red as fire.  
'Have I,' quoth he, 'been ta'en in fight,  
And for so many moons lain by't,  
And when all other means did fail,  
Have been exchanged for tubs of ale?  
Not but they thought me worth a ransom  
Much more considerable and handsome ;  
But for their own sakes, and for fear  
They were not safe, when I was there ;  
Now to be baffled by a scoundrel,  
An upstart sect'ry, and a mongrel,  
Such as breed out of peccant humours  
Of our own church, like wens or tumours,  
And like a maggot in a sore,  
Would that which gave it life devour ;  
It never shall be done or said :'  
With that he seized upon his blade ;  
And Ralpho too, as quick and bold,  
Upon his basket-hilt laid hold,  
With equal readiness prepared  
To draw and stand upon his guard ;  
When both were parted on the sudden,  
With hideous clamour, and a loud one,  
As if all sorts of noise had been  
Contracted into one loud din ;  
Or that some member to be chosen,  
Had got the odds above a thousand ;  
And, by the greatness of his noise,  
Proved fittest for his country's choice.  
This strange surprisal put the knight  
And wrathful squire into a fright ;

*And though they stood prepared, with fatal  
Impetuous rancour, to join battle,  
Both thought it was the wisest course  
To wave the fight, and mount to horse,  
And to secure, by swift retreating,  
Themselves from danger of worse beating ;  
Yet neither of them would disparage,  
By uttering of his mind, his courage,  
Which made 'em stoutly keep their ground,  
With horror and disdain wind-bound.*

And now the cause of all their fear  
By slow degrees approached so near,  
They might distinguish different noise  
Of horns, and pans, and dogs, and boys,  
And kettle-drums, whose sullen dub  
Sounds like the hooping of a tub.  
But when the sight appeared in view,  
They found it was an antique show ;  
A triumph that, for pomp and state,  
Did proudest Romans emulate :  
For as the aldermen of Rome  
Their foes at training overcome,  
And not enlarging territory,  
As some, mistaken, write in story,  
Being mounted in their best array,  
Upon a car, and who but they ?  
And followed by a world of tall lads,  
That merry ditties trolled, and ballads,  
Did ride with many a good-morrow,  
Crying, 'Hey for the town,' through the borough ;  
So when this triumph drew so nigh  
They might particulars descry,  
They never saw two things so pat,  
In all respects, as this and that.  
First, he that led the cavalcate,  
Wore a sow-gelder's flagellate,  
On which he blew as strong a levet,  
As well-fee'd lawyer on his brevate,  
When over one another's heads  
They charge, three ranks at once, like Sweads :  
Next pans and kettles of all keys,  
From trebles down to double base ;

And after them, upon a nag,  
That might pass for a fore hand stag,  
A cornet rode, and on his staff  
A smock displayed did proudly wave.  
Then bagpipes of the loudest drones,  
With snuffling broken-winded tones,  
Whose blasts of air, in pockets shut,  
Sound filthier than from the gut,  
And make a viler noise than swine,  
In windy weather, when they whine.  
Next one upon a pair of panniers,  
Full fraught with that which, for good manners,  
Shall here be nameless, mixed with grains,  
Which he dispensed among the swains,  
And busily upon the crowd  
At random round about bestowed.  
Then, mounted on a hornèd horse,  
One bore a gauntlet and gilt spurs.  
Tied to the pommel of a long sword  
He held reversed, the point turned downward.  
Next after, on a raw-boned steed,  
The conqueror's standard-bearer rid,  
And bore aloft before the champion  
A petticoat displayed, and rampant ;  
Near whom the Amazon triumphant  
Bestrid her beast, and on the rump on't  
Sat face to tail, and bum to bum,  
The warrior whilom overcome ;  
Armed with a spindle and a distaff,  
Which, as he rode, she made him twist off ;  
And when he loitered, o'er her shoulder  
Chastized the reformado soldier.  
Before the dame, and round about,  
Marched whifflers, and staffiers on foot,  
With lackeys, grooms, valets, and pages,  
In fit and proper equipages ;  
Of whom some torches bore, some links,  
Before the proud virago-minx,  
That was both madam, and a don,  
Like Nero's Sporus, or pope Joan ;  
And at five periods the whole rout  
Set up their throats with clamorous shout.

The knight transported, and the squire,  
Put up their weapons, and their ire ;  
And Hudibras, who used to ponder  
On such sights with judicious wonder,  
Could hold no longer to impart  
His an'madversions, for his heart.

Quoth he, ' In all my life, till now,  
I ne'er saw so profane a show ;  
• It is a paganish invention,  
Which heathen writers often mention ;  
And he who made it had read Goodwin,  
Or Ross, or Cælius Rhodigine,  
With all the Grecian Speeds and Stows,  
That best describe those ancient shows ;  
And has observed all fit decorums  
We find described by old historians :  
For, as the Roman conqueror,  
That put an end to foreign war,  
Entering the town in triumph for it,  
Bore a slave with him in his chariot ;  
So this insulting female brave,  
Carries behind her here a slave :  
And as the ancients long ago,  
When they in field defied the foe,  
Hung out their mantles *della guerre*,  
So her proud standard-bearer here,  
Waves on his spear, in dreadful manner,  
A Tyrian petticoat for banner.  
Next links and torches, heretofore  
Still borne before the emperor :  
And, as in antique triumph eggs  
Were borne for mystical intrigues,  
There's one, with truncheon, like a ladle,  
That carries eggs too, fresh or addle ;  
And still at random, as he goes,  
Among the rabble-rout bestows.'

Quoth Ralpho, ' You mistake the matter ;  
For all th' antiquity you smatter  
Is but a riding used of course,  
When the grey mare's the better horse ;  
When o'er the breeches greedy women  
Fight, to extend their vast dominion,

And in the cause impatient Grizel  
 Has drubbed her husband when difficile,  
 And brought him under covert-baron,  
 To turn her vassal with a murrain ;  
 When wives their sexes shift, like hares,  
 Oppress their husbands, like night-mares ;  
 And they, in mortal battle vanquished,  
 Are of their charter disenfranchised,  
 And by the right of war, like gills,  
 Condemned to distaff, horns, and wheels :  
 For when men by their wives are cowed,  
 'Their horns of course are understood.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'Thou still giv'st sentence  
 Impertinently, and against sense :  
 'Tis not the least disparagement  
 To be defeated by th' event,  
 Nor to be beaten by main force ;  
 That does not make a man the worse,  
 Although his shoulders, with battoon  
 Be clawed, and cudgelled to some tune ;  
 A tailor's prentice has no hard  
 Measure, that's banged with a true yard ;  
 But to turn tail, or run away,  
 And without blows give up the day ;  
 Or to surrender ere the assault,  
 That's no man's fortune, but his fault ;  
 And renders men of honour less  
 Than all th' adversity of success ;  
 And only unto such this show  
 Of horns and petticoats is due.  
 There is a lesser profanation,  
 Like that the Romans called ovation :  
 For as ovation was allowed  
 For conquest purchased without blood ;  
 So men decree those lesser shows  
 For victory gotten without blows,  
 By dint of sharp hard words, which some  
 Give battle with, and overcome ;  
 These mounted in a chair-curule,  
 Which moderns call a cucking-stool,  
 March proudly to the river's side,  
 And o'er the waves in triumph ride :

Like dukes of Venice, who are said  
The Adriatic sea to wed,  
And have a gentler wife than those  
For whom the state decrees those shows.  
But both are heathenish, and come  
From th' whores of Babylon and Rome,  
And by the saints should be withstood,  
As antichristian and lewd ;  
And we, as such should now contribute  
Our utmost strugglings to prohibit.'

This said, they both advanced, and rode  
A dog-trot through the bawling crowd  
T' attack the leader, and still pressed,  
Till they approached him breast to breast :  
Then Hudibras, with face and hand,  
Made signs for silence ; which obtained,  
'What means,' quoth he, 'this dev'l's procession  
With men of orthodox profession ?  
'Tis ethnic and idolatrous,  
From heathenism derived to us.  
Does not the whore of Bab'lon ride  
Upon her hornèd beast astride,  
Like this proud dame, who either is  
A type of her, or she of this ?  
Are things of superstitious function,  
Fìt to be used in gospel sunshine ?  
It is an antichristian opera,  
Much used in midnight times of popery ;  
Of running after self-inventions  
Of wicked and profane intentions ;  
To scandalize that sex, for scolding,  
To whom the saints are so beholden.  
Women, who were our first apostles,  
Without whose aid w' had all been lost else ;  
Women, that left no stone unturned  
In which the Cause might be concerned ;  
Brought in their children's spoons and whistles,  
To purchase swords, carabines, and pistols ;  
Their husbands, cullies, and sweethearts,  
To take the saints' and chu'hes' parts :  
Drew several gifted brèthrer in,  
That for the bishops would have been,

And fixed 'em constant to the party,  
With motives powerful and hearty :  
Their husbands robbed, and made hard shifts  
T' administer unto their gifts  
All they could rap, and rend, and pilfer,  
To scraps and ends of gold and silver ;  
Rubbed down the teachers, tired and spent  
With holding forth for parliament ;  
Pampered and edified their zeal  
With marrow puddings many a meal :  
Enabled them, with store of meat,  
Or controverted points, to eat ;  
And crammed them, till their guts did ache,  
With caudle, custard, and plum-cake.  
What have they done, or what left undone,  
'That might advance the Cause at London ?  
Marched rank and file, with drum and ensign,  
T' intrench the city for defence in :  
Raised rampires with their own soft hands,  
To put the enemy to stands ;  
From ladies down to oyster wenches  
Laboured like pioneers in trenches,  
Fell to their pick-axes, and tools,  
And helped the men to dig like moles ?  
Have not the handmaids of the city  
Chose of their members a committee,  
For raising of a common purse,  
Out of their wages, to raise horse ?  
And do they not as triers sit,  
To judge what officers are fit ?  
Have they '—At that an egg let fly,  
Hit him directly o'er the eye,  
And running down his cheek, besmeared,  
With orange-tawny slime, his beard ;  
But beard and slime being of one hue,  
The wound the less appeared in view.  
Then he that on the panniers rode,  
Let fly on th' other side a load,  
And quickly charged again, gave fully,  
In Ralpho's face another volley.  
'The knight was startled with the smell,  
And for his sword began to feel ;

And Ralpho, smothered with the stink,  
Grasped his, when one that bore a link,  
O' th' sudden clapped his flaming cudgel,  
Like linstock, to the horse's touch-hole ;  
And straight another, with his flambeau,  
Gave Ralpho, o'er the eyes, a rammed blow.  
The beasts began to kick and fling,  
And forced the rout to make a ring ;  
Through which they quickly broke their way,  
And brought them off from further fray ;  
And though disordered in retreat,  
Each of them stoutly kept his seat :  
For quitting both their swords and reins,  
'They grasped with all their strength the manes ;  
And, to avoid the foe's pursuit,  
With spurring put their cattle to't,  
And till all four were out of wind,  
And danger too, ne'er looked behind.  
After they 'ad paused a while, supplying  
Their spirits, spent with fight and flying,  
And Hudibras recruited force  
Of lungs, for action or discourse ;  
Quoth he, 'That man is sure to lose  
That fouls his hands with dirty foes :  
For where no honour's to be gained,  
'Tis thrown away in being maintained :  
'Twas ill for us, we had to do  
With so dishon'rabl a foe :  
For though the law of arms doth bar  
The use of venom'd shot in war,  
Yet by the nauseous smell, and noisome,  
Their casè-shot savour strong of poison ;  
And, doubtless, have been chewed with teeth  
Of some that had a stinking breath ;  
Else when we put it to the push,  
They had not given us such a brush :  
But as those poltroons that fling dirt  
Do but defile, but cannot hurt ;  
So all the honour they have won,  
Or we have lost, is much at one.  
'Twas well we made so resolute  
A brave retreat, without pursuit ;



For if we had not, we had sped  
Much worse, to be in triumph led ;  
Than which the ancients held no state  
Of man's life more unfortunate.  
But if this bold adventure e'er  
Do chance to reach the widow's ear,  
It may, being destined to assert  
Her sex's honour, reach her heart :  
And as such homely treats, they say,  
Portend good fortune, so this may.  
Vespasian being daubed with dirt,  
Was destined to the empire for't ;  
And from a scavenger did come  
To be a mighty prince in Rome :  
And why may not this foul address  
Presage in love the same success ?  
Then let us straight, to cleanse our wounds,  
Advance in quest of nearest ponds ;  
And after, as we first designed,  
Swear I've performed what she enjoined.'

## CANTO III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The knight, with various doubts possessed,  
To win the lady goes in quest  
Of Sidrophel the Rosicrucian,  
To know destinies' resolution ;  
With whom being met, they both chop logic  
About the science astrologic ;  
Till falling from dispute to fight,  
The conjurer's worried by the knight.

DOUBTLESS the pleasure is as great  
Of being cheated, as to cheat ;  
As lookers-on feel most delight,  
'That least perceive a juggler's sleight,  
And still the less they understand,  
The more th' admire his sleight of hand.

Some with a noise, and greasy light,  
Are snapped, as men catch larks by night,  
Ensnared and hampered by the soul,  
As nooses by the legs catch fowl.  
Some, with a medicine, and receipt,  
Are drawn to nibble at the bait ;  
And though it be a two-foot trout,  
'Tis with a single hair pulled out.

Others believe no voice t' an organ  
So sweet as lawyer's in his bar-gown,  
Until, with subtle cobweb-cheats,  
They're caught in knotted law like nets ;  
In which, when they are once imbrangled,  
The more they stir, the more they're tangled ;  
And while their purses can dispute,  
There's no end of th' immortal suit.

Others still gape t' anticipate  
The cabinet-designs of fate,  
Apply to wizards, to foresee  
What shall, and what shall never be ;

And as those vultures do forbode,  
Believe events prove bad or good :  
A flam more senseless than the roguery  
Of old aruspicy and augury,  
That out of garbages of cattle  
Presaged th' events of truce or battle ;  
From flight of birds, or chickens pecking,  
Success of great'st attempts would reckon :  
Though cheats, yet more intelligible  
Than those that with the stars do fribble.  
This Hudibras by proof found true,  
As in due time and place we'll show ;  
For he, with beard and face made clean,  
Being mounted on his steed again——  
And Ralpho got a cock-horse too,  
Upon his beast, with much ado——  
Advanced on for the widow's house,  
'T' acquit himself, and pay his vows ;  
When various thoughts began to bustle,  
And with his inward man to juggle.  
He thought what danger might accrue,  
If she should find he swore untrue ;  
Or if his squire or he should fail,  
And not be punctual in their tale,  
It might at once the ruin prove  
Both of his honour, faith, and love :  
But if he should forbear to go,  
She might conclude he 'ad broke his vow ;  
And that he durst not now, for shame,  
Appear in court to try his claim.  
This was the pen'worth of his thought,  
To pass time, and uneasy trot.

Quoth he, ' In all my past adventures  
I ne'er was set so on the tenters,  
Or taken tardy with dilemma,  
'That every way I turn does hem me,  
And with inextricable doubt,  
Besets my puzzled wits about :  
For though the dame has been my bail,  
To free me from enchanted jail,  
Yet, as a dog, committed close  
For some offence, by chance breaks loose,

And quits his clog ; but all in vain,  
He still draws after him his chain :  
So though my ankle she has quitted,  
My heart continues still committed ;  
And like a bailed and mainprized lover,  
Although at large, I am bound over :  
And when I shall appear in court  
To plead my cause, and answer for't,  
Unless the judge do partial prove,  
What will become of me and love ?  
For if in our account we vary,  
Or but in circumstance miscarry ;  
Or if she put me to strict proof,  
And make me pull my doublet off,  
To show, by evident recòrd,  
Writ on my skin, I've kept my word,  
How can I e'er expect to have her,  
Having demurred unto her favour ?  
But faith, and love, and honour lost,  
Shall be reduced t' a knight o' th' post ?  
Beside, that stripping may prevent  
What I'm to prove by argument,  
And justify I have a tail,  
And that way, too, my proof may fail.  
Oh ! that I could enucleate,  
And solve the problems of my fate ;  
Or find, by necromantic art,  
How far the destinies take my part ;  
For if I were not more than certain  
To win and wear her, and her fortune,  
I'd go no farther in this courtship,  
To hazard soul, estate, and worship :  
For though an oath obliges not,  
Where any thing is to be got,  
As thou hast proved, yet 'tis profane,  
And sinful, when men swear in vain.'

Quoth Ralph, 'No! far from hence doth dwell  
A cunning man, hight Sidrophel,  
That deals in destiny's dark counsels,  
And sage opinions of the moon sells,  
To whom all people, far and near,  
On deep importances repair :

When brass and pewter hap to stray,  
And linen slinks out o' the way,  
When geese and pullen are seduced,  
And sows of sucking pigs are choused ;  
When cattle feel indisposition,  
And need th' opinion of physician ;  
When murrian reigns in hogs or sheep,  
And chickens languish of the pip ;  
When yeast and outward means do fail,  
And have no power to work on ale ;  
When butter does refuse to come,  
And love proves cross and humoursome ;  
'To him with questions, and with urine,  
'They for discovery flock, or curing.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'This Sidrophel  
I've heard of, and should like it well,  
If thou canst prove the saints have freedom  
'To go to sorcerers when they need 'em.'

Says Ralpho, 'There's no doubt of that ;  
Those principles I quoted late  
Prove that the godly may allege  
For any thing their privilege,  
And to the devil himself may go,  
If they have motives thereunto :  
For as there is a war between  
The devil and them, it is no sin  
If they, by subtle stratagem,  
Make use of him, as he does them.  
Has not this present parliament  
A ledger to the devil sent,  
Fully empowered to treat about  
Finding revolted witches out ?  
And has not he, within a year,  
Hanged threescore of 'em in one shire ?  
Some only for not being drowned,  
And some for sitting above ground,  
Whole days and nights, upon their breeches,  
And feeling pain, were hanged for witches ;  
And some for putting knavish tricks  
Upon green cheese and turkey-chicks,

Or pigs, that suddenly deceased  
Of griefs unnatural, as he guessed ;  
Who after proved himself a witch,  
And made a rod for his own breech.  
Did not the devil appear to Martin  
Luther in Germany for certain ?  
And would have gulled him with a trick,  
But Mart. was too, too politic.  
Did he not help the Dutch to purge,  
At Antwerp, their cathedral church ?  
Sing catches to the saints at Mascon,  
And tell them all they came to ask him ?  
Meet with the parliament's committee,  
At Woodstock, on a personal treaty ?  
At Sarum take a cavalier,  
I' th' Cause's service, prisoner ?  
As Withers, in immortal rhyme,  
Has registered to after-time.  
Do not our great reformers use  
This Sidrophel to forbode news ;  
To write of victories next year,  
And castles taken, yet i' th' air ?  
Of battles fought at sea, and ships  
Sunk, two years hence ? the last eclipse ?  
A total o'erthrow given the king  
In Cornwall, horse and foot, next spring ?  
And has not he point-blank foretold  
Whats'e'er the close committee would ?  
Made Mars and Saturn for the cause,  
The moon for fundamental laws ?  
The Ram, the Bull, and Goat, declare  
Against the Book of Common-Prayer ?  
The Scorpion take the protestation,  
And Bear engage for reformation ?  
Made all the royal stars recant,  
Compound and take the covenant ?'  
Quoth Hudibras, 'The case is clear  
The saints may employ a conjurer,  
As thou hast proved it by their practice ;  
No argument like matter of fact is :  
And we are best of all led to  
Men's principles, by what they do.

Then let us straight advance in quest  
Of this profound gymnosophist,  
And as the fates and he advise,  
Pursue, or waive this enterprise.'

This said, he turned about his steed,  
And eftsoons on th' adventure rid ;  
Where leave we him and Ralph a while,  
And to the Conjurer turn our stile,  
'To let our reader understand  
What's useful of him before-hand.  
He had been long t'wards mathematics,  
Optics, philosophy, and statics,  
Magic, horoscopy, astrology,  
And was old dog at physiology ;  
But as a dog that turns the spit  
Bestirs himself, and plics his feet  
To climb the wheel, but all in vain,  
His own weight brings him down again,  
And still he's in the self-same place  
Where at his setting out he was ;  
So in the circle of the arts  
Did he advance his natural parts,  
'Till falling back still, for retreat,  
He fell to juggle, cant, and cheat :  
For as those fowls that live in water  
Are never wet, he did but smatter ;  
Whate'er he laboured to appear,  
His understanding still was clear ;  
Yet none a deeper knowledge boasted,  
Since old Hodge Bacon, and Bob Grosted.  
Th' intelligible world he knew,  
And all men dream on't to be true,  
That in this world there's not a wart  
'That has not there a counterpart ;  
Nor can there, on the face of ground  
An individual beard be found  
That has not, in that foreign nation,  
A fellow of the self-same fashion ;  
So cut, so coloured, and so curled,  
As those are in th' inferior world.  
He 'ad read Dee's prefaces before  
The devil, and Euclid, o'er and o'er ;

And all th' intrigues 'twixt him and Kelly,  
Lescus and th' emperor, wou'd tell ye :  
But with the moon was more familiar  
'Than e'er was almanack well-willer ;  
Her secrets understood so clear,  
'That some believed he had been there ;  
Knew when she was in fittest mood  
For cutting corns, or letting blood ;  
Whether the wane be, or increase,  
Best to set garlic, or sow peas ;  
Who first found out the man i' th' moon,  
'That to the ancients was unknown ;  
How many dukes, and earls, and peers,  
Are in the planetary spheres,  
Their airy empire, and command,  
'Their several strengths by sea and land ;  
What factions they 'ave, and what they drive at  
In public vogue, or what in private ;  
With what designs and interests  
Each party manages contests.  
He made an instrument to know  
If the moon-shine at full or no ;  
'That would, as soon as e'er she shone, straight  
Whether 'twere day or night demonstrate ;  
'Tell what her d'iameter to an inch is,  
And prove that she's not made of green cheese.  
It wou'd demonstrate, that the man in  
The moon's a sea Mediterranean ;  
And that it is no dog nor bitch  
'That stands behind him at his breech,  
But a huge Caspian sea, or lake,  
With arms, which men for legs mistake ;  
How large a gulph his tail composes,  
And what a goodly bay his nose is ;  
How many German leagues by th' scale  
Cape snout's from promontory tail.  
He made a planetary gin,  
Which rats would run their own heads in,  
And come on purpose to be taken,  
Without th' expense of cheese or bacon.  
With lute-strings he would counterfeit  
Maggots, that crawl on dish of meat ;



Quote moles and spots on any place  
O' th' body, by the index face ;  
Detect sly love affairs by sneezing,  
Or catching breath of dames, or wheezing ;  
Cure warts and corns, with application  
Of medicines to th' imagination ;  
Fright agues into dogs, and scare,  
With rhymes, the toothache and catarrh ;  
Chase evil spirits away by dint  
Of sickle, horse-shoe, hollow-flint ;  
Spit fire out of a walnut-shell,  
Which made the Roman slaves rebel ;  
And fire a mine in China here,  
With sympathetic gunpowder.  
He knew what's ever's to be known,  
But much more than he knew would own.  
What medicine 'twas that Paracelsus  
Could make a man with, as he tells us ;  
What figured slates are best to make,  
On watery surface, duck or drake ;  
What bowling-stones, in running race  
Upon a board, have swiftest pace ;  
Whether a pulse beat in the black  
List of a dappled louse's back ;  
If systole or diastole move  
Quickest when he's in wrath, or love ;  
When two of them do run a race,  
Whether they gallop, trot, or pace ;  
How many scores a flea will jump,  
Of his own length, from head to rump,  
Which Socrates and Chærephon  
In vain assayed so long ago ;  
Whether his snout a perfect nose is,  
And not an elephant's proboscis ;  
How many different species  
Of maggots breed in rotten cheese ;  
And which are next of kin to those  
Engendered in a chandler's nose ;  
Or those not seen, but understood,  
That live in vinegar and wood.  
A paltry wretch he had, half starved,  
That him in place of zany served,

Hight Whachum, bred to dash and draw,  
Not wine, but more unwholesome law ;  
To make 'twixt words and lines huge gaps,  
Wide as meridians in maps ;  
To squander paper, and spare ink,  
Or cheat men of their words, some think.  
From this, by merited degrees,  
He'd to more high advancement rise,  
To be an under-conjurer,  
Or journeyman astrologer :  
His business was to pump and wheedle,  
And men with their own keys unriddle ;  
To make them to themselves give answers,  
For which they pay the necromancers ;  
To fetch and carry intelligence  
Of whom, and what, and where, and whence,  
And all discoveries disclose  
Among th' whole pack of conjurers ;  
What cut-purses have left with them,  
For the right owners to redeem,  
And what they dare not vent, find out,  
To gain themselves and th' art repute ;  
Draw figures, schemes, and horoscopes,  
Of Newgate, Bridewell, brokers' shops,  
Of thieves ascendant in the cart,  
And find out all by rules of art :  
Which way a serving-man, that's run  
With clothes or money away, is gone ;  
Who picked a fob at holding-forth,  
And where a watch, for half the worth,  
May be redeemed ; or stolen plate  
Restored at conscionable rate.  
Beside all this, he served his master  
In quality of poetaster,  
And rhymes appropriate could make  
To every month i' th' almanack ;  
Where terms begin, and end, could tell,  
With their returns, in doggerel ;  
When the exchequer opens and shuts,  
And sow gelder with safety cuts ;  
When men may eat and drink their fill,  
And when be temperate if they will ;

When use, and when abstain from vice,  
Figs, grapes, phlebotomy, and spice.  
And as in prison mean rogues beat  
Hemp for the service of the great,  
So Whachum beat his dirty brains  
T' advance his master's fame and gains,  
And, like the devil's oracles,  
Put into doggerel rhymes his spells,  
Which, over ev'ry month's blank page  
I' th' almanack, strange bilks presage.  
He would an elegy compose  
On maggots squeezed out of his nose ;  
In lyric numbers write an ode on  
His mistress, eating a black-pudden ;  
And, when imprisoned air escaped her,  
It puffed him with poetic rapture ;  
His sonnets charmed th' attentive crowd,  
By wide-mouthed mortal trolled aloud,  
That, circled with his long-eared guests,  
Like Orpheus looked among the beasts :  
A carman's horse could not pass by,  
But stood tied up to poetry ;  
No porter's burthen passed along,  
But served for burthen to his song :  
Each window like a pillory appears,  
With heads thrust through, nailed by the ears ;  
All trades run in as to the sight  
Of monsters, or their dear delight  
The gallows-tree, when cutting purse  
Breeds business for heroic verse,  
Which none does hear, but would have hung  
T' have been the theme of such a song.  
Those two together long had lived,  
In mansion, prudently contrived,  
Where neither tree nor house could bar  
The free detection of a star ;  
And nigh an ancient obelisk  
Was raised by him, found out by Fisk,  
On which was written, not in words,  
But hieroglyphic mute of birds,  
Many rare pithy saws, concerning  
The worth of astrologic learning :

From top of this there hung a rope,  
To which he fastened telescope ;  
The spectacles with which the stars  
He reads in smallest characters.  
It happened as a boy, one night,  
Did fly his tassel of a kite,  
The strangest long-winged hawk that flies,  
That, like a bird of Paradise,  
Or herald's martlet, has no legs,  
Nor hatches young ones, nor lays eggs ;  
His train was six yards long, milk-white,  
At th' end of which there hung a light,  
Enclosed in lantern made of paper,  
That far off like a star did appear :  
This Sidrophel by chance espied,  
And with amazement staring wide ;  
' Bless us,' quoth he, ' what dreadful wonder  
Is that appears in heaven yonder ?  
A comet, and without a beard !  
Or star that ne'er before appeared ?  
I'm certain 'tis not in the scroll  
Of all those beasts, and fish, and fowl,  
With which, like Indian plantations,  
The learned stock the constellations ;  
Nor those that, drawn for signs, have been  
To th' houses where the planets in.  
It must be supernatural,  
Unless it be that cannon-ball  
That, shot i' th' air, point-blank upright,  
Was borne, to that prodigious height,  
That, learned philosophers maintain,  
It ne'er came backwards down again,  
But in the airy region yet  
Hangs, like the body of Mahomet :  
For if it be above the shade,  
That by the earth's round bulk is made,  
'Tis probable it may, from far,  
Appear no bullet, but a star.'  
This said, he to his engine flew,  
Placed near at hand, in open view,  
And raised it, till it levelled right  
Against the glow-worm tail of kite ;

Then peeping through, 'Bless us,' quoth he,  
'It is a planet, now, I see ;  
And, if I err not, by his proper  
Figure, that's like tobacco-stopper, .  
It should be Saturn : yes, 'tis clear  
'Tis Saturn ; but what makes him there?  
He's got between the Dragon's tail  
And farther leg behind o' th' Whale ;  
Pray heaven divert the fatal omen,  
For 'tis a prodigy not common,  
And can no less than the world's end,  
Or Nature's funeral, portend.'  
With that, he fell again to pry  
Through perspective, more wistfully,  
When, by mischance, the fatal string,  
'That kept the towering fowl on wing,  
Breaking, down fell the star. 'Well shot,'  
Quoth Whachum, who right wisely thought  
He 'ad levelled at a star, and hit it ;  
But Sidrophel, more subtle-witted,  
Cried out, ' What horrible and fearful  
Portent is this, to see a star fall !  
It threatens nature, and the doom  
Will not be long before it come !  
When stars do fall, 'tis plain enough  
The day of judgment's not far off ;  
As lately 'twas revealed to Sedgwick,  
And some of us find out by magic :  
Then, since the time we have to live  
In this world's shortened, let us strive  
To make our best advantage of it, '  
And pay our losses with our profit.'  
This feat fell out not long before  
The knight, upon the forenamed score,  
In quest of Sidrophel advancing,  
Was now in prospect of the mansion ;  
Whom he discovering, turned his glass,  
And found far off 'twas Hudibras.  
'Whachum,' quoth he, 'look yonder, some  
To try or use our art are come :  
The one's the learnèd knight ; seek out,  
And pump 'em what they come about.'

Whachum advanced, with all submiss'ness  
T' accost 'em, but much more their business ;  
He held a stirrup, while the knight  
From leathern Bare-bones did alight ;  
And, taking from his hand the bridle,  
Approached, the dark squire to unriddle.  
• He gave him first the time o' th' day,  
And welcomed him, as he might say :  
He asked him whence they came, and whither  
Their business lay ? Quoth Ralpho, ' Hither.'  
' Did you not lose '—Quoth Ralpho, ' Nay.'  
Quoth Whachum, ' Sir, I meant your way !  
Your knight,—Quoth Ralpho, ' Is a lover,—  
And pains intolerable doth suffer ;  
For lovers' hearts are not their own hearts,  
Nor lights, nor lungs, and so forth downwards.'  
' What time '—Quoth Ralpho, ' Sir too long,  
Three years it off and on has hung—'  
Quoth he, ' I meant what time o' the day 'tis ;'  
Quoth Ralpho, ' Between seven and eight 'tis.'  
' Why then,' quoth Whachum, ' my small art  
Tells me the dame has a hard heart,  
Or great estate.'—Quoth Ralph, ' A jointure,  
Which makes him have so hot a mind t' her.'  
• Meanwhile the knight was taking water,  
Before he fell upon the matter ;  
Which having done, the wizard steps in,  
To give him a suitable reception ;  
But kept his business at a bay,  
Till Whachum put him in the way ;  
Who having now, by Ralpho's light,  
Expounded th' errand of the knight,  
And what he came to know, drew near  
To whisper in the conjurer's ear,  
Which he prevented thus : ' What was't,'  
Quoth he, ' That I was saying last,  
Before these gentlemen arrived ?'  
Quoth Whachum, ' Venus you retrieved  
In opposition with Mars,  
And no benign or friendly stars  
T' allay the effect.' Quoth wizard, ' So !  
In Virgo ? ha !' Quoth Whachum, ' No :'

‘Has Saturn nothing to do in it?’  
 ‘One tenth of ’s circle to a minute?’  
 ‘’Tis well,’ quoth he—‘Sir, you’ll excuse  
 This rudeness I am forced to use;  
 It is a scheme, and face of heaven  
 As th’ aspects are disposed this even,  
 I was contemplating upon  
 When you arrived; but now I’ve done.’

Quoth Hudibras, ‘If I appear  
 Unseasonable in coming here  
 At such a time, to interrupt  
 Your speculations, which I hoped  
 Assistance from, and come to use,  
 ’Tis fit that I ask your excuse.’

‘By no means, Sir,’ quoth Sidrophel,  
 The stars your coming did foretell;  
 I did expect you here, and knew,  
 Before you spake, your business too.’

Quoth Hudibras, ‘Make that appear,  
 And I shall credit whatsoe’er  
 You tell me after, on your word,  
 Howe’er unlikely, or absurd.’

‘You are in love, Sir, with a widow,’  
 Quoth he, ‘that does not greatly heed you,  
 And for three years had rid your wit  
 And passion, without drawing bit;  
 And now your business is to know  
 If you shall carry her, or no.’

Quoth Hudibras, ‘You’re in the right,  
 But how the devil you come by’t  
 I can’t imagine; for the stars,  
 I’m sure, can tell no more than a horse;  
 Nor can their aspects, though you pore  
 Your eyes out on ’em, tell you more  
 Than th’ oracle of sieve and shears,  
 That turns as certain as the spheres;  
 But if the devil’s of your counsel,  
 Much may be done, my noble donzel;  
 And ’tis on his account I come,  
 To know from you my fatal doom.’

Quoth Sidrophel, ‘If you suppose,  
 Sir Knight, that I am one of those,

I might suspect, and take the alarm,  
Your business is but to inform ;  
But if it be, 'tis ne'er the near,  
You have a wrong sow by the ear ;  
For I assure you, for my part,  
I only deal by rules of art ;  
Such as are lawful, and judge by  
Conclusions of astrology ;  
But for the devil, know nothing by him,  
But only this that I defy him.'

Quoth he, ' Whatever others deem ye,  
I understand your metonymy ;  
Your words of second-hand intention,  
When things by wrongful names you mention ;  
The mystic sense of all your terms,  
That are indeed but magic charms  
To raise the devil, and mean one thing  
And that is downright conjuring ;  
And in itself more warrantable  
Than cheat or canting to a rabble,  
Or putting tricks upon the moon,  
Which by confederacy are done.  
Your ancient conjurers were wont  
To make her from her sphere dismount,  
And to their incantation stoop ;  
' They scorned to pore through telescope,  
Or idly play at bo-peep with her,  
To find out cloudy or fair weather,  
Which every almanack can tell,  
Perhaps as learnedly and well  
As you yourself—' Then, friend, I doubt  
You go the farthest way about :  
Your modern Indian magician  
Makes but a hole in th' earth to fish in,  
And straight resolves all questions by't,  
And seldom fails to be i' th' right.  
The Rosicrucian way's more sure  
To bring the devil to the lure ;  
Each of 'em has a several gin,  
To catch intelligences in.  
Some by the nose, with fumes, trepan 'em,  
As Dunstan did the devil's grannam ;



Others with characters and words  
 Catch 'em, as men in nets do birds ;  
 And some with symbols, signs, and tricks,  
 Engraved in planetary nicks.  
 With their own influences will fetch 'em  
 Down from their orbs, arrest and catch 'em ;  
 Make 'em depose and answer to  
 All questions, ere they let them go.  
 Bombastus kept a devil's bird  
 Shut in the pommel of his sword,  
 That taught him all the cunning pranks  
 Of past and future mountebanks.  
 Kelly did all his feats upon  
 The devil's looking-glass, a stone,  
 Where, playing with him at bo-peep,  
 He solved all problems ne'er so deep.  
 Agrippa kept a Stygian pug,  
 I' th' garb and habit of a dog,  
 That was his tutor, and the cur  
 Read to th' occult philosopher,  
 And taught him subtilly to maintain  
 All other sciences are vain.'

To this, quoth Sidrophello, 'Sir,  
 Agrippa was no conjurer.  
 Nor Paracelsus, no, nor Behmen ;  
 Nor was the dog a cacodemon,  
 But a true dog, that would show tricks  
 For th' emperor, and leap o'er sticks ;  
 Would fetch and carry, was more civil  
 Than other dogs, and yet no devil ;  
 And whatsoe'er he's said to do,  
 He went the self-same way we go,  
 As for the Rosy-cross philosophers,  
 Whom you will have to be but sorcerers,  
 What they pretend to is no more  
 Than Trismegistus did before,  
 Pythagoras, old Zoroaster,  
 And Apollonius their master,  
 To whom they do confess they owe  
 All that they do, and all they know.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'Alas ! what is't us  
 Whether 'twas said by Trismegistus,

If it be nonsense, false, or mystic,  
Or not intelligible, or sophistic?  
'Tis not antiquity, nor author,  
That makes truth truth, although Time's daughter;  
'Twas he that put her in the pit,  
Before he pulled her out of it;  
And as he eats his sons, just so  
He feeds upon his daughters too.  
Nor does it follow, 'cause a herald  
Can make a gentleman, scarce a year old,  
To be descended of a race  
Of ancient kings in a small space,  
That we should all opinions hold  
Authentic, that we can make old.'

Quoth Sidrophel, 'It is no part  
Of prudence to cry down an art,  
And what it may perform, deny,  
Because you understand not why;  
As Averrois played but a mean trick,  
'To damn our whole art for eccentric;  
For who knows all that knowledge contains?  
Men dwell not on the tops of mountains,  
But on their sides, or risings, seat;  
So 'tis with knowledge's vast height.  
Do not the histories of all ages  
Relate miraculous presages  
Of strange turns, in the world's affairs,  
Foreseen b' astrologers, soothsayers,  
Chaldeans, learned Genethliacs,  
And some that have writ almanacks?  
The Median emperor dreamt his daughter  
Had drowned all Asia under water,  
And that a vine, sprung from her haunches,  
O'erspread his empire with its branches;  
And did not soothsayers expound it,  
As after by th' event he found it?  
When Caesar in the senate fell,  
Did not the sun eclipsed foretell,  
And, in resentment of his slaughter,  
Looked pale for almost a year after?  
Augustus having, b' oversight,  
Put on his left shoe fore his right,

Had like to have been slain that day,  
By soldiers mutining for pay.  
Are there not myriads of this sort,  
Which stories of all times report?  
Is it not ominous in all countries,  
When crows and ravens croak upon trees?  
The Roman senate, when within  
The city walls an owl was seen,  
Did cause their clergy, with lustrations,  
Our synod calls humiliations,  
The round-faced prodigy t' avert  
From doing town or country hurt.  
And if an owl have so much power,  
Why should not planets have much more,  
That in a region far above  
Inferior fowls of the air move,  
And should see further, and foreknow  
More than their augury below?  
Though that once served the polity  
Of mighty states to govern by;  
And this is what we take in hand,  
By powerful art, to understand;  
Which, how we have perform'd, all ages  
Can speak th' events of our presages.  
Have we not lately in the moon,  
Found a new world, to th' old unknown?  
Discovered sea and land, Columbus  
And Magellan could never compass?  
Made mountains with our tubes appear,  
And cattle grazing on 'em there?'

Quoth Hudibras, ' You lie so ope,  
That I, without a telescope,  
Can find your tricks out, and descry  
Where you tell truth, and where you lie :  
For Anaxagoras, long ago,  
Saw hills, as well as you, i' th' moon,  
And held the sun was but a piece  
Of red-hot iron as big as Greece ;  
Believed the heavens were made of stone,  
Because the sun had voided one ;  
And, rather than he would recant  
Th' opinion, suffered banishment.

But what, alas ! is it to us,  
Whether i' th' moon, men thus or thus  
Do eat their porridge, cut their corns,  
Or whether they have tails or horns ?  
What trade from thence can you advance,  
But what we nearer have from France ?  
What can our travellers bring home,  
That is not to be learned at Rome ?  
What politics, or strange opinions,  
That are not in our own dominions ?  
What science can be brought from thence,  
In which we do not here commence ?  
What revelations, or religions,  
That are not in our native regions ?  
Are sweating lanterns, or screen-fans,  
Made better there than they're in France ?  
Or do they teach to sing and play  
O' th' guitar there a newer way ?  
Can they make plays there, that shall fit  
The public humour with less wit ?  
Write wittier dances, quainter shows,  
Or fight with more ingenious blows ?  
Or does the man i' th' moon look big,  
And wear a huger periwig ?  
Show in his gait, or face, more tricks  
Than our own native lunatics ?  
But if w' outdo him here at home,  
What good of your design can come ?  
As wind i' th' hypocondres pent,  
Is but a blast, if downward sent,  
But if it upward chance to fly,  
Becomes new light and prophecy ;  
So when your speculations tend  
Above their just and useful end,  
Although they promise strange and great  
Discoveries of things far set,  
They are but idle dreams and fancies,  
And savour strongly of the ganzas.  
Tell but me what's the natural cause  
Why on a sign no painter draws  
The full-moon ever, but the half ?  
Resolve that with your Jacob's staff ;

Or why wolves raise a hubbub at her,  
 And dogs howl when she shines in water?  
 And I shall freely give my vote,  
 You may know something more remote.'

At this, deep Sidrophel looked wise,  
 And staring round with owl-like eyes,  
 He put his face into a posture  
 Of sapience, and began to bluster;  
 For having three times shook his head  
 To stir his wit up, thus he said:  
 'Art has no mortal enemies  
 Next ignorance, but owls and geese;  
 Those consecrated geese, in orders,  
 That to the Capitol were warders,  
 And being then upon patrol,  
 With noise alone beat off the Gaul;  
 Or those Athenian sceptic owls,  
 That will not credit their own souls,  
 Or any science understand,  
 Beyond the reach of eye or hand;  
 But measuring all things by their own  
 Knowledge, hold nothing's to be known;  
 Those wholesale critics, that in coffee-  
 Houses cry down all philosophy,  
 And will not know upon what ground  
 In nature we our doctrine found,  
 Although with pregnant evidence  
 We can demonstrate it to sense,  
 As I just now have done to you,  
 Foretelling what you came to know.  
 Were the stars only made to light  
 Robbers and burglars by night?  
 To wait on drunkards, thieves, gold-finders,  
 And lovers solacing behind doors,  
 Or giving one another pledges  
 Of matrimony under hedges?  
 Or witches simpling, and on gibbets  
 Cutting from malefactors snippets?  
 Or from the pillory tips of ears  
 Of rebel-saints and perjurers?  
 Only to stand by, and look on,  
 But not know what is said or done?

Is there a constellation there  
That was not born and bred up here;  
And therefore cannot be to learn  
In any inferior concern?  
Were they not, during all their lives,  
Most of 'em pirates, whores, and thieves?  
And is it like they have not still,  
In their old practices, some skill?  
Is there a planet that by birth  
Does not derive its house from earth;  
And therefore probably must know  
What is, and hath been done below?  
Who made the Balance, or whence came  
The Bull, the Lion, and the Ram?  
Did not we here the Argo rig,  
Make Berenice's periwig?  
Whose livery does the coachman wear?  
Or who made Cassiopeia's chair?  
And therefore, as they came from hence,  
With us may hold intelligence.  
Plato denied the world can be  
Governed without geometry.  
For money b'ing the common scale  
Of things by measure, weight, and tale,  
In all th' affairs of church and state,  
'Tis both the balance and the weight;  
Then much less can it be without  
Divine astrology made out,  
That puts the other down in worth,  
As far as heaven's above the earth.  
'These reasons,' quoth the knight, 'I grant  
Are something more significant  
Than any that the learned use  
Upon this subject to produce;  
And yet they're far from satisfactory,  
T' establish and keep up your factory.  
Th' Egyptians say, the sun has twice  
Shifted his setting and his rise;  
Twice has he risen in the west,  
As many times set in the east;  
But whether that be true or no,  
The devil any of you know.

Some hold, the heavens, like a top,  
Are kept by circulation up,  
And were't not for their wheeling round,  
They'd instantly fall to the ground ;  
As sage Empedocles of old,  
And from him modern authors hold.  
Plato believed the sun and moon  
Below all other planets run.  
Some Mercury, some Venus seat  
Above the Sun himself in height.  
The learned Scaliger complained  
'Gainst what Copernicus maintained,  
That in twelve hundred years, and odd,  
The Sun had left its ancient road,  
And nearer to the Earth is come  
'Bove fifty thousand miles from home ;  
Swore 'twas a most notorious flam,  
And he that had so little shame  
To vent such fopperies abroad,  
Deserved to have his rump well clawed ;  
Which Monsieur Bodin hearing, swore  
That he deserved the rod much more,  
That durst upon a truth give doom,  
He knew less than the pope of Rome.  
Cardan believed great states depend  
Upon the tip o' th' Bear's-tail's end ;  
That as she whisked it towards the Sun,  
Strowed mighty empires up and down ;  
Which others say must needs be false,  
Because your true bears have no tails.  
Some say the Zodiac constellations  
Have long since changed their antique stations  
Above a sign, and prove the same  
In Taurus now, once in the Ram ;  
Affirmed the Trignons chopped and changed,  
The watery with the fiery ranged ;  
Then how can their effects still hold  
To be the same they were of old ?  
This, though the art were true, would make  
Our modern soothsayers mistake,  
And is one cause they tell more lies,  
In figures and nativities,

Than th' old Chaldean conjurers,  
In so many hundred thousand years ;  
Besides their nonsense in translating,  
For want of accidence and Latin,  
Like Idus, and Calendæ, englished  
The quarter-days, by skilful linguist ;  
And yet with canting, sleight, and cheat,  
T'will serve their turn to do the feat ;  
Make fools believe in their foreseeing  
Of things before they are in being ;  
To swallow gudgeons ere they're caught,  
And count their chickens ere they're hatched ;  
Make them the constellations prompt,  
And give 'em back their own accompt ;  
But still the best to him that gives  
The best price for't, or best believes.  
Some towns, some cities, some, for brevity,  
Have cast the 'versal world's nativity,  
And made the infant-stars confess,  
Like fools or children, what they please.  
Some calculate the hidden fates  
Of monkeys, puppy-dogs, and cats ;  
Some running-rags, and fighting-cocks ;  
Some love, trade, law-suits, and the stocks :  
Some take a measure of the lives  
Of fathers, mothers, husbands, wives,  
Make opposition, trine, and quartile,  
Tell who is barren, and who fertile ;  
As if the planet's first aspect  
The tender infant did infect  
In soul and body, and instil  
All future good and future ill ;  
Which in their dark fatal'ties lurking,  
At destined periods fall a-working,  
And break out, like the hidden seeds  
Of long diseases, into deeds,  
In friendships, enmities, and strife,  
And all th' emergencies of life :  
No sooner does he peep into  
The world, but he has done his do,  
Caught all diseases, took all physic  
That cures or kills a man that is sick ;



Married his punctual dose of wives,  
Is cuckolded, and breaks, or thrives.  
'There's but the twinkling of a star  
Between a man of peace and war ;  
A thief and justice, fool and knave,  
A huffing officer and a slave ;  
A crafty lawyer and pickpocket,  
A great philosopher and a blockhead ;  
A formal preacher and a player,  
A learned physician and manslayer ;  
As if men from the stars did suck  
Old age, diseases, and ill-luck,  
And draw, with the first air they breathe,  
Battle and murder, sudden death.  
Are not these fine commodities  
'To be imported from the skies,  
And vended here among the rabble,  
For staple goods and warrantable ?  
Like money by the Druids borrowed,  
In th' other world to be restored.'

Quoth Sidrophel, 'To let you know  
You wrong the art and artists too,  
Since arguments are lost on those  
'That do our principles oppose,  
I will, although I've done 't before,  
Demonstrate to your sense once more,  
And draw a figure that shall tell you  
What you, perhaps, forget befel you ;  
By way of horary inspection,  
Which some account our worst erection.

With that, he circles draws, and squares,  
With cyphers, astral characters,  
Then looks 'em o'er to understand 'em,  
Although set down hab-nab, at random.

Quoth he, 'This scheme of th' heavens set,  
Discovers how in fight you met,  
At Kingston, with a may-pole idol,  
And that y'were banged both back and side well ;  
And though you overcame the bear,  
'The dogs beat you at Brentford fair ;  
Where sturdy butchers broke your noddle,  
And handled you like a fop doodle.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'I now perceive  
You are no conjurer, by your leave :  
That paltry story is untrue,  
And forged to cheat such gulls as you.'  
'Not true !' quoth he ; 'howe'er you vapour,  
I can what I affirm make appear ;  
Whachum shall justify it t' your face,  
And prove he was upon the place :  
He played the saltinbancho's part,  
Transformed t' a Frenchman by my art ;  
He stole your cloak, and picked your pocket,  
Chowsed and caldesed you like a blockhead,  
And what you lost I can produce,  
If you deny it, here i' th' house.'

Quoth Hudibras, 'I do believe  
That argument's demonstrative ;  
Ralpho, bear witness, and go fetch us  
A constable to seize the wretches ;  
For though they're both false knaves and cheats,  
Impostors, jugglers, counterfeits,  
I'll make them serve for perpendic'lars,  
As true as e'er were used by bricklayers.  
They're guilty, by their own confessions,  
(Of felony, and at the sessions,  
Upon the bench, I will so handle 'em,  
▪ That the vibration of this pendulum  
Shall make all tailors' yards of one  
Unanimous opinion ;  
A thing he long has vapoured of,  
But now shall make it out by proof.'

Quoth Sidrophel, 'I do not doubt  
To find friends that will bear me out ;  
Nor have I hazarded my art,  
And neck, so long on the state's part,  
To be exposed, i' th' end, to suffer  
By such a braggadocio huffer.'

'Huffer !' quoth Hudibras, 'this sword  
Shall down thy false throat cram that word.  
Ralpho, make haste, and call an officer,  
To apprehend this Stygian sophister ;  
Meanwhile I'll hold 'em at a bay,  
Lest he and Whachum run away.'

But Sidrophel, who from th' aspect  
Of Hudibras, did now erect  
A figure worse portending far  
Than that of most malignant star ;  
Believed it now the fittest moment  
To shun the danger that might come on't,  
While Hudibras was all alone,  
And he and Whachum, two to one.  
This being resolved, he spied by chance,  
Behind the door, an iron lance,  
That many a sturdy limb had gored,  
And legs, and loins, and shoulders bored ;  
He snatched it up, and made a pass,  
'To make his way through Hudibras.  
Whachum had got a fire-fork,  
With which he vowed to do his work ;  
But Hudibras was well prepared,  
And stoutly stood upon his guard :  
He put by Sidrophello's thrust,  
And in right manfully he rushed ;  
'The weapon from his gripe he wrung,  
And laid him on the earth along.  
Whachum his sea-coal prong threw by,  
And basely turned his back to fly ;  
But Hudibras gave him a twitch,  
As quick as lightning, in the breech,  
Just in the place where honour's lodged,  
As wise philosophers have judged ;  
Because a kick in that part more  
Hurts honour, than deep wounds before.

Quoth Hudibras, 'The stars determine  
You are my prisoners, base vermin :  
Could they not tell you so, as well  
As what I came to know, foretell ?  
By this, what cheats you are, we find,  
That in your own concerns are blind.  
Your lives are now at my dispose,  
'To be redeemed by fine or blows :  
But who his honour would defile,  
'To take, or sell, two lives so vile ?  
I'll give you quarter ; but your pillage,  
The conquering warrior's crop and tillage,

Which with his sword he reaps and ploughs,  
That's mine, the law of arms allows.'

This said in haste, in haste he fell  
To rummaging of Sidrophel.  
First he expounded both his pockets,  
And found a watch, with rings and lockets,  
Which had been left with him t' erect

• A figure for, and so detect ;  
A copperplate, with almanacks  
Engraved upon't, with other knacks  
Of Booker's, Lilly's, Sarah Jimmers,  
And blank-schemes to discover nimmers ;  
A moon-dial, with Napier's bones,  
And several constellation stones,  
Engraved in planetary hours,  
That over mortals had strange powers  
To make 'em thrive in law or trade,  
And stab or poison to evade ;  
In wit or wisdom to improve,  
And be victorious in love.  
Whachum had neither cross nor pile,  
His plunder was not worth the while ;  
All which the conqueror did discompt,  
To pay for curing of his rump.

But Sidrophel, as full of tricks  
• As Rota-men of politics,  
Straight cast about to over-reach  
Th' unwary conqueror with a fetch,  
And make him glad, at least, to quit  
His victory, and fly the pit,  
Before the secular prince of darkness  
Arrived t<sup>o</sup> seize upon his carcass :  
And as a fox with hot pursuit,  
Chased through a warren, casts about  
To save his credit, and among  
Dead vermin on a gallows hung,  
And, while the dogs run underneath,  
Escaped by counterfeiting death,  
Not out of cunning, but a train  
Of atoms justling in his brain,  
As learned philosophers give out ;  
So Sidrophello cast about,

And fell to 's wonted trade again,  
To feign himself in earnest slain :  
First stretched out one leg, then another,  
And, seeming in his breast to smother  
A broken sigh, quoth he, 'Where am I?  
Alive, or dead? or which way came I  
'Through so immense a space so soon?  
But now I thought myself i' th' moon,  
And that a monster, with huge whiskers,  
More formidable than a Switzer's,  
My body through and through had drilled,  
And Whachum by my side had killed,  
Had cross-examined both our hose,  
And plundered all we had to lose ;  
Look, there he is, I see him now,  
And feel the place I am run through :  
And there lies Whachum by my side  
Stone-dead, and in his own blood dyed,  
Oh ! oh !—with that he fetched a groan,  
And fell again into a swoon ;  
Shut both his eyes, and stopped his breath,  
And to the life out-acted death,  
'That Hudibras, to all appearing,  
Believed him to be as dead as herring.  
He held it now no longer safe  
To tarry the return of Ralph,  
But rather leave him in the lurch :  
'Thought he, 'He has abused our church,  
Refused to give himself one firk  
'To carry on the public work ;  
Despised our synod-men like dirt,  
And made their discipline his spott ;  
Divulged the secrets of their classes,  
And their conventions proved high places ;  
Disparaged their tithe-pigs, as pagan,  
And set at nought their cheese and bacon ;  
Railed at their covenant, and jeered  
Their reverend parsons, to my beard ;  
For all which scandals, to be quit  
At once, this juncture falls out fit.  
I'll make him henceforth, to beware,  
And tempt my fury, if he dare :

He must, at least, hold up his hand,  
By twelve free-holders to be scanned,  
Who, by their skill in palmistry,  
Will quickly read his destiny,  
And make him glad to read his lesson,  
Or take a turn for't at the session :  
Unless his light and gifts prove truer  
Than ever yet they did, I'm sure ;  
For if he 'scape with whipping now,  
'Tis more than he can hope to do ;  
And that will disengage my conscience  
Of th' obligation, in his own sense :  
I'll make him now by force abide,  
What he by gentle means denied,  
To give my honour satisfaction,  
And right the brethren in the action.'

This being resolved, with equal speed,  
And conduct, he approached his steed,  
And, with activity unwont,  
Essay'd the lofty beast to mount ;  
Which once achieved, he spurred his palfrey,  
To get from th' enemy and Ralph free ;  
Left danger, fears, and foes behind,  
And beat, at least three lengths, the wind.

AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF HUDIBRAS TO  
SIDROPHIEL.

*Ecce iterum Crispinus.*

WELL, Sidrophel, though 'tis in vain  
To tamper with your crazy brain,  
Without trepanning of your skull,  
As often as the moon's at full,  
'Tis not amiss, ere ye're given o'er,  
To try one desperate medicine more ;  
For where your case can be no worse,  
'The desp'rat'st is the wisest course.  
Is't possible that you, whose ears  
Are of the tribe of Issachar's,  
And might, with equal reason, either  
For merit, or extent of leather,  
With William Prynne's, before they were  
Retrenched, and crucified, compare,  
Should yet be deaf against a noise  
So roaring as the public voice ?  
That speaks your virtues free and loud,  
And openly in every crowd,  
As loud as one that sings his part  
T' a wheelbarrow, or turnip-cart,  
Or your new nicked-named old invention  
To cry green-hastings with an engine ;  
As if the vehemence had stunned,  
And torn your drumheads with the sound ;  
And 'cause your folly's now no news,  
But overgrown, and out of use,  
Persuade yourself there's no such matter,  
But that 'tis vanished out of nature ;  
When folly, as it grows in years,  
'The more extravagant appears ;  
For who but you could be possessed  
With so much ignorance and beast,  
'That neither all men's scorn and hate  
Nor being laughed and pointed at,

Nor brayed so often in a mortar,  
 Can teach you wholesome sense and nurture,  
 But, like a reprobate, what course  
 Soever used, grow worse and worse ?  
 Can no transfusion of the blood,  
 That makes fools cattle, do you good ?  
 •Nor putting pigs t' a bitch to nurse,  
 To turn them into mongrel curs,  
 Put you into a way, at least,  
 To make yourself a better beast ?  
 Can all your critical intrigues,  
 Of trying sound from rotten eggs ;  
 Your several new-found remedies,  
 Of curing wounds and scabs in trees ;  
 Your arts of fluxing them perhaps,  
 Or purging their infected saps ;  
 Recovering cankers, crystallines,  
 And nodes and blotches in their rinds,  
 Have no effect to operate  
 Upon that duller block, your pate ?  
 But still it must be lewdly bent  
 To tempt your own due punishment ;  
 And, like your whimsied chariots, draw  
 The boys to course you without law ;  
 As if the art you have so long  
 Professed, of making old dogs young,  
 In you had virtue to renew  
 Not only youth, but childhood too :  
 Can you, that understand all books,  
 By judging only with your looks,  
 Resolve all problems with your face,  
 As others do with Bs and As ;  
 Unriddle all that mankind knows  
 With solid bending of your brows ;  
 All arts and sciences advance,  
 With screwing of your countenance,  
 And with a penetrating eye,  
 Into th' abstrusest learning pry ;  
 Know more of any trade b' a hint,  
 Than those that have been bred up in't,  
 And yet have no art, true or false,  
 To help your own bad naturals ?



But still the more you strive t' appear,  
Are found to be the wretcheder :  
For fools are known by looking wise,  
As men find woodcocks by their eyes.  
Hence 'tis that 'cause ye 'ave gained o' th' college  
A quarter share, at most, of knowledge,  
And brought in none, but spent repute,  
Y' assume a power as absolute  
'To judge, and censure, and control,  
As if you were the sole Sir Poll,  
And saucily to pretend to know  
More than your dividend comes to :  
You'll find the thing will not be done  
With ignorance and face alone :  
No, though ye 'ave purchased to your name,  
In history, so great a fame ;  
That now your talent's so well known,  
For having all belief outgrown,  
That every strange prodigious tale  
Is measured by your German scale,  
By which the virtuosi try  
The magnitude of every lie,     •  
Cast up to what it does amount,  
And place the bigg'st to your account :  
'That all those stories that are laid  
Too truly to you, and those made,  
Are now still charged upon your score,  
And lesser authors named no more.  
Alas ! that faculty betrays  
Those soonest it designs to raise ;  
And all your vain renown will spoil,  
As guns o'ercharged the more recoil ;  
Though he that has but impudence,  
To all things has a fair pretence ;  
And put among his wants but shame,  
To all the world may lay his claim :  
Though you have tried that nothing's borne  
With greater ease than public scorn,  
That all affronts do still give place  
To your impenetrable face ;  
That makes your way through all affairs,  
As pigs through hedges creep with theirs :

Yet as 'tis counterfeit, and brass,  
You must not think 'twill always pass ;  
For all impostors, when they're known,  
Are past their labour, and undone :  
And all the best that can befall  
An artificial natural,  
Is that which madmen find, as soon  
As once they're broke loose from the moon,  
And, proof against her influence,  
Relapse to e'er so little sense,  
To turn stark fools, and subjects fit  
For sport of boys, and rabble wit.

## PART III.—CANTO I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The knight and squire resolve at once  
The one the other to renounce ;  
They both approach the lady's bower,  
The squire t' inform, the knight to woo her.  
She treats them with a masquerade,  
By furies and hobgoblins made ;  
From which the squire conveys the knight,  
And steals him from himself by night.

'Tis true, no lover has that power  
T' enforce a desperate amour,  
As he that has two strings t' his bow,  
And burns for love and money too ;  
For then he's brave and resolute,  
Disdains to render in his suit ;  
Has all his flames and raptures double,  
And hangs or drowns with half the trouble ;  
While those who sillily pursue  
The simple, downright way, and true,  
Make as unlucky applications,  
And steer against the stream their passions.  
Some forge their mistresses of stars,  
And when the ladies prove averse,  
And more untoward to be won  
Than by Caligula the moon,  
Cry out upon the stars for doing  
Ill offices, to cross their wooing,  
When only by themselves they're hindered,  
For trusting those they made her kindred,  
And still the harsher and hide-bounder,  
The damsels prove, become the fonder ;  
For what mad lover ever died  
To gain a soft and gentle bride ?  
Or for a lady tender-hearted,  
In purling streams, or hemp departed ?

Leaped headlong int' Elysium,  
Through th' windows of a dazzling room ?  
But for some cross ill-natured dame,  
The amorous fly burnt in his flame.  
This to the knight would be no news,  
With all mankind so much in use,  
Who therefore took the wiser course,  
To make the most of his amours,  
Resolved to try all sorts of ways,  
As follows in due time and place.

No sooner was the bloody fight  
Between the wizard and the knight,  
With all th' appurtenances over,  
But he relapsed again t' a lover ;  
As he was always wont to do,  
When he 'ad discomfited a foe,  
And used the only antique philters  
Derived from old heroic tilters.  
But now triumphant and victorious,  
He held th' achievement was too glorious  
For such a conqueror to meddle  
With petty constable or beadle ;  
Or fly for refuge to the hostess  
Of th' inns of court and chancery, justice ;  
Who might, perhaps, reduce his cause  
To th' ordeal trial of the laws ;  
Where none escape, but such as branded  
With red-hot irons, have past bare-handed ;  
And if they cannot read one verse  
I' th' psalms, must sing it, and that's worse.  
He, therefore, judging it below him  
To tempt a shame the devil might owe him,  
Resolved to leave the squire for bail  
And mainprize for him, to the jail,  
To answer, with his vessel, all  
That might disastrously befall.  
He thought it now the fittest juncture  
To give the lady a rencounter,  
T' acquaint her with his expedition,  
And conquest o'er the fierce magician ;  
Describe the manner of the fray,  
And show the spoils he brought away ;

His bloody scourging aggravate,  
The number of the blows, and weight ;  
All which might probably succeed,  
And gain belief he 'ad done the deed :  
Which he resolved t' enforce, and spare  
No pawning of his soul to swear ;  
But, rather than produce his back,  
To set his conscience on the rack ;  
And in pursuance of his urging  
Of articles performed, and scourging,  
And all things else, upon his part,  
Demand delivery of her heart,  
Her goods and chattels, and good graces,  
And person, up to his embraces.  
'Thought he, the ancient errant knights  
Won all their ladies' hearts in fights,  
And cut whole giants into fitters,  
To put them into amorous twitters ;  
Whose stubborn bowels scorned to yield,  
Until their gallants were half killed ;  
But when their bones were drubbed so sore,  
'They durst not woo one combat more,  
'The ladies' hearts began to melt,  
Subdued by blows their lovers felt.  
So Spanish heroes, with their lances,  
At once wound bulls, and ladies' fancies ;  
And he acquires the noblest spouse  
That widows greatest herds of cows ;  
Then what may I expect to do,  
Who 'ave quelled so vast a buffalo ?

Meanwhile the squire was on his way,  
The knight's late orders to obey ;  
Who sent him for a strong detachment  
Of beadles, constables, and watchmen,  
T' attack the cunning-man, for plunder  
Committed falsely on his lumber ;  
When he, who had so lately sacked  
'The enemy, had done the fact,  
Had rifled all his pokes and fobs  
Of ginscracks, whims, and jiggunbobs,  
Which he by hook or crook had gathered,  
And for his own inventions fathered ;

And when they should, at gaol delivery,  
Unriddle one another's thievery,  
Both might have evidence enough  
To render neither halter-proof.  
He thought it desperate to tarry,  
And venture to be accessory ;  
But rather wisely slip his fetters,  
And leave them for the knight, his betters.  
He called to mind th' unjust foul play  
He would have offered him that day,  
To make him curry his own hide,  
Which no beast ever did beside,  
Without all possible evasion,  
But of the riding dispensation ;  
And therefore, much about the hour  
The knight, for reasons told before,  
Resolved to leave him to the fury  
Of justice, and an unpacked jury,  
The squire concurred t' abandon him,  
And serve him in the self-same trim ;  
T' acquaint the lady what he 'ad done,  
And what he meant to carry on ;  
What project 't was he went about,  
When Sidrophel and he fell out ;  
His firm and steadfast resolution,  
To swear her to an execution ;  
To pawn his inward ears to marry her,  
And bribe the devil himself to carry her.  
In which both dealt, as if they meant  
Their party-saints to represent,  
Who never failed, upon their sharing  
In any prosperous arms-bearing,  
To lay themselves out, to supplant  
Each other cousin-german saint.  
But ere the knight could do his part,  
The squire had got so much the start,  
He 'ad to the lady done his errand,  
And told her all his tricks aforehand.

Just as he finished his report,  
The knight alighted in the court,  
And having tied his beast t' a pale,  
And taking time for both to stale,

He put his band and beard in order,  
The sprucer to accost and board her :  
And now began t' approach the door,  
When she, wh' had spied him out before,  
Conveyed th' informer out of sight,  
And went to entertain the knight :  
With whom encountering, after longees  
Of humble and submissive congees,  
And all due ceremonies paid,  
He stroked his beard, and thus he said :

‘ Madam, I do, as is my duty,  
Honour the shadow of your shoe-tie ;  
And now am come, to bring your ear  
A present you'll be glad to hear ;  
At least I hope so : the thing's done,  
Or may I never see the sun ;  
For which I humbly now demand  
Performance at your gentle hand ;  
And that you'd please to do your part,  
As I have done mine, to my smart.’

With that he shrugged his sturdy back,  
As if he felt his shoulders ache ;  
But she, who well enough knew what,  
Before he spoke, he would be at,  
Pretended not to apprehend  
The mystery of what he meant,  
And therefore wished him to expound  
His dark expressions less profound.

‘ Madam,’ quoth he, ‘ I come to prove  
How much I've suffered for your love,  
Which, like your votary, to win,  
I have not spared my tattered skin !  
And, for those meritorious lashes,  
To claim your favour and good graces.’

Quoth she, ‘ I do remember once  
I freed you from th' enchanted sconce ;  
And that you promised, for that favour,  
To bind your back to 'ts good behaviour ;  
And for my sake and service, vowed  
To lay upon 't a heavy load,  
And what 't would bear 't a scruple prove,  
As other knights do oft make love ;

Which, whether you have done or no,  
Concerns yourself, not me, to know ;  
But if you have, I shall confess,  
Y' are honester than I could guess.'

Quoth he, ' If you suspect my troth,  
I cannot prove it but by oath ;  
And, if you make a question on't,  
I'll pawn my soul that I have don't :  
And he that makes his soul his surety,  
I think, does give the best secur'ty.'

Quoth she, ' Some say the soul's secure  
Against distress and forfeiture ;  
Is free from action, and exempt  
From execution and contempt ;  
And to be summoned to appear  
In th' other world's illegal here,  
And therefore few make any account,  
Int' what incumbrances they run't :  
For most men carry things so even  
Between this world, and hell, and heaven,  
Without the least offence to either,  
They freely deal in all together,  
And equally abhor to quit  
'This world for both, or both for it ;  
And when they pawn and damn their souls,  
They are but prisoners on paroles.'

' For that,' quoth he, ' 'tis rational,  
They may be accountable in all :  
For when there is that intercourse  
Between divine and human powers,  
'That all that we determine here  
Commands obedience every where ;  
When penalties may be commuted  
For fines, or ears, and executed,  
It follows, nothing binds so fast  
As souls in pawn and mortgage past :  
For oaths are th' only tests and scales  
Of right and wrong, and true and false ;  
And there's no other way to try  
The doubts of law and justice by.'

Quoth she, ' What is it you would swear ?  
There's no believing till I hear :



For, till they're understood, all tales,  
Like nonsense, are not true nor false.'  
Quoth he, ' When I resolved t' obey  
What you commanded th' other day,  
And to perform my exercise,  
As schools are wont, for your fair eyes ;  
T' avoid all scruples in the case,  
I went to do't upon the place ;  
But as the castle is enchanted  
By Sidrophel the witch, and haunted  
With evil spirits, as you know,  
Who took my squire and me for two,  
Before I'd hardly time to lay  
My weapons by, and disarray,  
I heard a formidable noise,  
Loud as the Stentrophonic voice,  
That roared far off,—“ Dispatch, and strip,  
I'm ready with th' infernal whip,  
That shall divest thy ribs of skin,  
To expiate thy lingering sin ;  
Thou 'ast broke perfidiously thy oath,  
And not performed thy plighted troth,  
But spared thy renegado back,  
Where th' hadst so great a prize at stake,  
Which now the Fates have ordered me,  
For penance and revenge, to flea,  
Unless thou presently make haste ;  
'Time is, time was : ”—and there it ceased.  
With which, though startled, I confess,  
Yet th' horror of the thing was less  
Than th' other dismal apprehension  
Of interruption or prevention ;  
And therefore, snatching up the rod,  
I laid upon my back a load,  
Resolved to spare no flesh and blood,  
To make my word and honour good ;  
Till tired, and taking truce at length,  
For new recruits of breath and strength,  
I felt the blows still plied as fast,  
As if they 'ad been by lovers placed,  
In raptures of Platonic lashing,  
And chaste contemplative bardashing ;

When facing hastily about,  
To stand upon my guard and scout,  
I found th' infernal cunning-man,  
And th' under-witch, his Caliban,  
With scourges, like the furies, armed,  
'That on my outward quarters stormed.  
In haste I snatched my weapon up,  
And gave their hellish rage a stop ;  
Called thrice upon your name, and fell  
Courageously on Sidrophel,  
Who now, transformed himself t' a bear,  
Began to roar aloud, and tear ;  
When I as furiously pressed on,  
My weapon down his throat to run,  
Laid hold on him ; but he broke loose,  
And turned himself into a goose,  
Dived under water, in a pond,  
To hide himself from being found.  
In vain I sought him ; but as soon  
As I perceived him fled and gone,  
Prepared, with equal haste and rage,  
His under-sorcerer t' engage ;  
But bravely scorning to defile  
My sword with feeble blood, and vile,  
I judged it better from a quick-  
Set hedge to cut a knotted stick,  
With which I furiously laid on :  
Till in a harsh and doleful tone,  
It roared,—“O hold, for pity, Sir,  
I am too great a sufferer,  
Abused, as you have been, b' a witch,  
But conjured int' a worse caprich,  
Who sends me out on many a jaunt,  
Old houses in the night to haunt,  
For opportunities t' improve  
Designs of thievery or love ;  
With drugs conveyed in drink or meat,  
All feats of witches counterfeit ;  
Kill pigs and geese with powdered glass,  
And make it for enchantment pass ;  
With cow-itch meazle like a leper,  
And choke with fumes of guinea pepper ;

Bewitch hermetic-men to run  
Stark staring mad with manicon ;  
Believe mechanic virtuosi  
Can raise 'em mountains in Potosi ;  
And, sillier than the antic fools,  
Take treasure for a heap of coals ;  
Seek out for plants with signatures,  
To quack off universal cures,  
With figures, ground on panes of glass,  
Make people on their heads to pass ;  
And mighty heaps of coin increase,  
Reflected from a single piece ;  
To draw in fools, whose natural itches  
Incline perpetually to witches,  
And keep me in continual fears,  
And danger of my neck and ears ;  
With less delinquents have been scourged,  
And hemp on wooden anvils forged,  
Which others for cravats have worn  
About their necks, and took a turn.”—

‘ I pitied the sad punishment  
The wretched caitiff underwent,  
And held my drubbing of his bones  
Too great an honour for poltroons ;  
For knights are bound to feel no blows  
From paltry and unequal foes,  
Who, when they slash and cut to pieces,  
Do all with civillest addresses :  
Their horses never give a blow,  
But when they make a leg and bow.  
I therefore spared his flesh, and pressed him  
About the witch, with many a quest'on.  
Quoth he,—For many years he drov:  
A kind of broking-trade in love,  
Employed in all th' intrigues and trust,  
Of feeble speculative lust ;  
Procurer to th' extravagancy  
And crazy ribaldry of fancy,  
By those the devil had forsook,  
As things below him, to provoke ;  
But being a virtuoso, able  
To smatter, quack, and cant, and dabble,

He held his talent most adroit,  
For any mystical exploit,  
As others of his tribe had done,  
And raised their prices three to one.  
*But as an elf, the devil's valèt,*  
Is not so slight a thing to get,  
For those that do his business best,  
In hell are used the ruggedest ;  
Before so meriting a person  
Could get a grant, but in reversion,  
He served two 'prenticeships, and longer,  
I' th' mystery of a lady-monger.  
For, as some write, a witch's ghost,  
As soon as from the body loosed,  
Becomes a puisney-imp itself,  
And is another witch's elf ;  
He, after searching far and near,  
At length found one in Lancashire,  
With whom he bargained beforehand,  
And, after hanging, entertained :  
Since which he 'as played a thousand feats,  
And practised all mechanic cheats ;  
'Transformed himself to th' ugly shapes  
Of wolves and bears, baboons and apes,  
Which he has varied more than witches,  
Or Pharaoh's wizards could their switches ;  
And all with whom he 'as had to do,  
'Turned to as monstrous figures too ;  
Witness myself, whom he 'as abused,  
And to this beastly shape reduced,  
By feeding me on beans and peas  
He grams in nasty crevices,  
And turns to comfits by his arts,  
'To make me relish for desserts,  
And one by one, with shame and fear,  
Lick up the candied provender.  
Beside'——But as h' was running on,  
To tell what other feats h' had done,  
The lady stopped his full career,  
And told him, now 'twas time to hear.  
'If half those things,' said she, 'be true,'—  
'They're all,' quoth he, 'I swear by you.'

‘Why then,’ said she, ‘that Sidrophel  
Has damned himself to th’ pit of hell,  
Who, mounted on a broom, the nag  
And hackney of a Lapland hag,  
In quest of you came hither post,  
Within an hour, I’m sure, at most,  
Who told me all you swear and say,  
Quite contrary another way ;  
Vowed that you came to him, to know  
If you should carry me or no ;  
And would have hired him and his imps,  
To be your match-makers and pimps,  
T’ engage the devil on your side,  
And steal, like Proserpine, your bride ;  
But he, disdaining to embrace  
So filthy a design, and base,  
You fell to vapouring and huffing,  
And drew upon him like a ruffian ;  
Surprised him meanly, unprepared,  
Before he ’ad time to mount his guard,  
And left him dead upon the ground,  
With many a bruise and desperate wound ;  
Swore you had broke and robbed his house,  
And stole his talismanique louse,  
And all his new-found old inventions,  
With flat felonious intentions,  
Which he could bring out, where he had,  
And what he bought ’em for, and paid :  
His flea, his morpion, and punese,  
He ’ad gotten for his proper ease,  
And all in perfect minutes made,  
By th’ ablest artist of the trade ;  
Which, he could prove it, since he lost,  
He has been eaten up almost,  
And altogether, might amount  
To many hundreds on account ;  
For which he ’ad got sufficient warrant  
To seize the malefactors errant,  
Without capacity of bail,  
But of a cart’s or horse’s tail ;  
And did not doubt to bring the wretches  
To serve for pendulums to watches,

Which, modern-virtuosi say,  
Incline to hanging every way.  
Beside, he swore, and swore 'twas true,  
That ere he went in quest of you,  
He set a figure to discover  
If you were fled to Rye or Dover ;  
And found it clear, that to betray,  
Yourselves and me, you fled this way ;  
And that he was upon pursuit,  
'To take you somewhere hereabout.  
He vowed he had intelligence  
Of all that passed before and since ;  
And found, that ere you came to him,  
Y' had been engaging life and limb  
About a case of tender conscience,  
Where both abounded in your own sense ;  
Till Ralpho, by his light and grace,  
Had cleared all scruples in the case,  
And proved that you might swear and own  
Whatever's by the wicked done ;  
For which, most basely to requite  
The service of his gifts and light,  
You strove t' oblige him, by main force,  
To scourge his ribs instead of yours ;  
But that he stood upon his guard,  
And all your vapouring outdared ;  
For which, between you both, the feat  
Has never been performed as yet.'

While thus the lady talked, the knight  
Turned th' outside of his eyes to white ;  
As men of inward light are wont  
To turn their optics in upon't ;  
He wondered how she came to know  
What he had done, and meant to do ;  
Held up his affidavit-hand,  
As if he 'ad been to be arraigned ;  
Cast towards the door a ghastly look,  
In dread of Sidrophel, and spoke :  
'Madam, if but one word be true  
Of all the wizard has told you,  
Or but one single circumstance  
In all th' apocryphal romance,

May dreadful earthquakes swallow down  
This vessel, that is all your own ;  
Or may the heavens fall, and cover  
These relics of your constant lover.'

'You have provided well,' quoth she,  
'I thank you, for yourself and me,  
And shown your Presbyterian wits  
Jump punctual with the Jesuits :  
A most compendious way, and civil,  
At once to cheat the world, the devil,  
And heaven and hell, yourselves, and those  
On whom you vainly think t' impose.'

'Why then,' quoth he, 'may hell surprise,'—  
'That trick,' said she, 'will not pass twice :  
I've learned how far I'm to believe  
Your pinning oaths upon your sleeve :  
But there's a better way of clearing  
What you would prove, than downright swearing ;  
For if you have performed the feat,  
The blows are visible as yet,  
Enough to serve for satisfaction  
Of nicest scruples in the action ;  
And if you can produce those knobs,  
Although they're but the witch's drubs,  
I'll pass them all upon account,  
As if your natural self had done 't.'

'Madam,' quoth he, 'your love's a million,  
To do is less than to be willing,  
As I am, were it in my power,  
T' obey what you command, and more ;  
But for performing what you bid,  
I thank you as much as if I did.  
You know I ought to have a care,  
To keep my wounds from taking air ;  
For wounds in those that are all heart,  
Are dangerous in any part.'

'I find,' quoth she, 'my goods and chattels  
Are like to prove but mere drawn battles ;  
For still the longer we contend,  
We are but farther off the end.  
But granting now we should agree,  
What is it you expect from me ?'

‘Your plighted faith,’ quoth he, ‘and word  
You passed in heaven, on record,  
Where all contracts to have and t’ hold,  
Are everlastingly enrolled ;  
And if ’tis counted treason here  
To raise records, ’tis much more there.’

Quoth she, ‘There are no bargains driven,  
Nor marriages clapped up, in heaven ;  
And that’s the reason, as some guess,  
There is no heaven in marriages,—  
Two things that naturally press  
Too narrowly, to be at ease ;  
Their business there is only love,  
Which marriage is not like t’ improve ;  
Love, that’s too gen’rous t’ abide  
To be against its nature tied ;  
For where ’tis of itself inclined,  
It breaks loose when it is confined,  
And like the soul, its harbourer,  
Debarred the freedom of the air,  
Disdains against its will to stay,  
But struggles out, and flies away :  
And therefore never can comply  
T’ endure the matrimonial tie,  
That binds the female and the male,  
Where th’ one is but the other’s bail ;  
Like Roman gaolers, when they slept,  
Chained to the prisoners they kept :  
Of which the true and faithfull’st lover  
Gives best security to suffer.  
Marriage is but a beast, some say,  
That carries double in foul way,  
And therefore ’tis not to b’ admired  
It should so suddenly be tired ;  
A bargain, at a venture made,  
Between two partners in a trade ;  
For what’s inferre’d by t’ have and t’ hold,  
But something past away, and sold ?  
That, as it makes but one of two,  
Reduces all things else as low ;  
And at the best is but a mart  
Between the one and th’ other part,



That on the marriage-day is paid,  
Or hour of death, the bet is laid.  
A law that most unjustly yokes  
All Johns of Stiles to Joans of Nokes,  
Without distinction of degree,  
Condition, age, or quality ;  
Admits no power of revocation,  
Nor valuable consideration,  
Nor writ of error, nor reverse  
Of judgment past, for better or worse ;  
Will not allow the privileges  
That beggars challenge under hedges,  
Who, when they're griev'd, can make dead horses  
'Their spiritual judges of divorces ;  
While nothing else but *rem in re*  
Can set the proudest wretches free ;  
A slavery beyond enduring,  
But that 'tis of their own procuring.  
As spiders never seek the fly,  
But leave him, of himself, t' apply ;  
So men are by themselves employed,  
'To quit the freedom they enjoy'd,  
And run their necks into a noose,  
They'd break 'em after to break loose.  
As some, whom death would not depart,  
Have done the feat themselves by art :  
Like Indian widows, gone to bed,  
In flaming curtains, to the dead ;  
And men as often dangled for't,  
And yet will never leave the sport.  
Nor do the ladies want excuse  
For all the stratagems they use ;  
For as the Pythagorean soul  
Runs through all beasts, and fish, and fowl,  
And has a smack of every one,  
So love does, and has ever done ;  
And therefore, though 'tis ne'er so fond,  
'Takes strangely to the vagabond.  
'Tis but an ague that's reversed,  
Whose hot fit takes the patient first,  
That after burns with cold as much  
As iron in Greenland does the touch ;

Melts in the furnace of desire,  
Like glass, that's but the ice of fire ;  
And when his heat of fancy's over,  
Becomes as hard and frail a lover :  
For when he's with love-powder laden,  
And primed and cocked by Miss, or Madam,  
'The smallest sparkle of an eye  
Gives fire to his artillery,  
And off the loud oaths go, but, while  
'They're in the very act, recoil :  
Hence 'tis so few dare take their chance  
Without a separate maintenance ;  
And widows, who have tried one lover,  
'Trust not again till they've made over ;  
Or if they do, before they marry,  
The foxes weigh the geese they carry ;  
And ere they venture o'er a stream,  
Know how to size themselves and them.  
Whence wittiest ladies always choose  
'To undertake the heaviest goose.  
'Though when their heroes 'spouse the dames,  
We hear no more of charms and flames ;  
For then their late attracts decline,  
And turn as eager as pricked wine ;  
And all their caterwauling tricks,  
In earnest to as jealous piques,  
Which th' ancients wisely signified  
By th' yellow mantos of the bride.  
For 'tis in vain to think to guess  
At women by appearances,  
'That paint and patch their imperfections  
Of intellectual complexions,  
And daub their tempers o'er with washes  
As artificial as their faces ;  
Wear under vizard-masks their talents  
And mother-wits before their gallants ;  
Until they're hampered in the noose,  
'Too fast to dream of breaking loose ;  
When all the flaws they strove to hide  
Are made unready with the bride,  
That with her wedding-clothes undresses  
Her complaisance and gentilleses ;

Tries all her arts to take upon her  
The government, from th' easy owner ;  
Until the wretch is glad to wave  
His lawful right, and turn her slave ;  
Find all his having and his holding,  
Reduced t' eternal noise and scolding ;  
The conjugal petard, that tears  
Down all portcullises of ears,  
And makes the volley of one tongue  
For all their leathern shields too strong ;  
When only armed with noise and nails,  
'The female silkworms ride the males.'

Quoth he, ' These reasons are but strains  
Of wanton, over-heated brains,  
Which ralliers in their wit or drink  
Do rather wheedle with, than think.  
Man was not man in Paradise,  
Until he was created twice,  
And had his better half, his bride,  
Carved from th' original, his side,  
T' amend his natural defects,  
And perfect his recruited sex.  
His body, that stupendous frame,  
Of all the world the anagram,  
Is of two equal parts compact,  
In shape and symmetry exact,  
Of which the left and female side  
Is to the manly right a bride,  
Both joined together with such art,  
That nothing else but death can part.  
Those heavenly attracts of yours, your eyes,  
And face, that all the world surprise,  
That dazzle all that look upon ye,  
And scorch all other ladies tawny ;  
Those ravishing and charming graces,  
Are all made up of two half faces  
That, in a mathematic line,  
Like those in other heavens, join ;  
Of which, if either grew alone,  
'Twould fright as much to look upon .  
And so would that sweet bud, your lip,  
Without the other's fellowship.

Our noblest senses act by pairs,  
Two eyes to see, to hear two ears ;  
Th' intelligencers of the mind,  
To wait upon the soul designed :  
But those that serve the body alone,  
Are single and confined to one.  
The world is but two parts, that meet  
And close at th' equinoctial fit ;  
And so are all the works of nature,  
Stamped with her signature on matter ;  
Which all her creatures, to a leaf,  
Or smallest blade of grass, receive.  
All which sufficiently declare  
How entirely marriage is her care,  
The only method that she uses,  
In all the wonders she produces :  
And those that take their rules from her  
Can never be deceived, nor err :  
For what secures the civil life,  
But pawns of children, and a wife ?  
That lie, like hostages, at stake,  
To pay for all men undertake ;  
To whom it is as necessary,  
As to be born and breathe, to marry ;  
So universal, all mankind  
In nothing else is of one mind :  
For in what stupid age or nation,  
Was marriage ever out of fashion ?  
Unless among the Amazons,  
Or cloistered friars and vestal nuns.  
For what can we pretend t' inherit,  
Unless the marriage-deed will bear it ?  
Could claim no right to lands or rents,  
But for our parents' settlements ;  
Had been but younger sons o' th' earth,  
Debarred it all, but for our birth.  
What honours, or estates of peers,  
Could be preserved but by their heirs ;  
And what security maintains  
Their right and title, but the banns ?  
What crowns could be hereditary,  
If greatest monarchs did not marry,

And with their consorts consummate  
Their weightiest interests of state ?  
For all the amours of princes are  
But guarantees of peace or war.  
Or what but marriage has a charm,  
The rage of empires to disarm ?  
Make blood and desolation cease,  
And fire and sword unite in peace,  
When all their fierce contests for forage  
Conclude in articles of marriage ?  
And though some fits of small contest  
Sometimes fall out among the best,  
That is no more than every lover  
Does from his hackney-lady suffer ;  
That makes no breach of faith and love,  
But rather, sometimes, serves t' improve :  
For as, in running, every pace  
Is but between two legs a race,  
In which both do their uttermost  
To get before, and win the post ;  
Yet when they're at their races' ends,  
They're still as kind and constant friends,  
And, to relieve their weariness,  
By turns give one another ease ;  
So all those false alarms of strife  
Between the husband and the wife,  
And little quarrels, often prove  
To be but new recruits of love ;  
When those who're always kind or coy,  
In time must either tire or cloy.  
Nor are their loudest clamours more  
Than as they're relished, sweet or sour ;  
Like music, that proves bad or good,  
According as 'tis understood.  
In all amours a lover burns  
With frowns, as well as smiles, by turns ;  
And hearts have been as oft with sullen,  
As charming looks, surprised and stolen ;  
Then why should more bewitching clamour  
Some lovers not as much enamour ?  
For discords make the sweetest airs,  
And curses are a kind of prayers ;

Two slight alloys for all those grand  
Felicities by marriage gained :  
For nothing else has power to settle  
Th' interests of love perpetual ;  
An act and deed that makes one heart  
Become another's counterpart,  
And passes fines on faith and love,  
Inrolled and registered above,  
To seal the slippery knots of vows,  
Which nothing else but death can loose.  
And what security's too strong  
To guard that gentle heart from wrong,  
That to its friend is glad to pass  
Itself away, and all it has,  
And, like an anchorite, gives over  
'This world, for the heaven of a lover ?'

'I grant,' quoth she, 'there are some few  
Who take that course, and find it true ;  
But millions whom the same does sentence  
To heaven, b' another way, repentance.  
Love's arrows are but shot at rovers,  
Though all they hit they turn to lovers,  
And all the weighty consequents  
Depend upon more blind events  
Than gamesters when they play a set,  
With greatest cunning, at piquet,  
Put out with caution, but take in  
They know not what, unsight, unseen  
For what do lovers, when they're fast  
In one another's arms embraced,  
But strive to plunder and convey  
Each other, like a prize away ?  
To change the property of selves,  
As sucking children are by elves ?  
And if they use their persons so,  
What will they to their fortunes do ?  
*Their fortunes ! the perpetual aims*  
*Of all their ecstasies and flames.*  
For when the money's on the book,  
And 'all my worldly goods'—but spoke,  
The formal livery and seisin  
That puts a lover in possession ;

To that alone the bridegroom's wedded,  
The bride a flam that's superseded ;  
To that their faith is still made good,  
And all the oaths to us they vowed ;  
For when we once resign our powers,  
W' have nothing left we can call ours :  
Our money's now become the miss  
Of all your lives and services ;  
Which as it made y' at first gallant us,  
So now hires others to supplant us,  
Until 'tis all turned out of doors,  
As we had been, for new amours.  
For what did ever heiress yet,  
By being born to lordships, get ?  
When the more lady she's of manors,  
She's but exposed to more trepanners,  
Pays for their projects and designs,  
And for her own destruction fines ;  
And does but tempt them with her riches,  
To use her as the devil does witches,  
Who takes it for a special grace  
To be their cully for a space,  
That, when the time's expired, 'the drazels  
For ever may become his vassals :  
So she, bewitched by rooks and spirits,  
Betrays herself, and all sh' inherits ;  
Until they force her to convey  
And steal the thief himself away.  
These are the everlasting fruits  
Of all your passionate love-suits,  
Th' effects of all your amorous fancies,  
To portions and inheritances ;     "  
Your love-sick rapture for fruition  
Of dowry, jointure, and tuition ;  
To which you make address and courtship,  
And with your bodies strive to worship,  
That th' infant's fortunes may partake  
Of love too, for the mother's sake.  
For these you play at purposes,  
And love your loves with As and Bs ;  
For these, at Beast and Ombre woo,  
And play for love and money too ;

Strive who shall be the ablest man  
At right gallanting of a fan ;  
And who the most genteelly bred  
At sucking of a vizard-bead ;  
How best t' accost us in all quarters,  
T' our question and command new garters ;  
And solidly discourse upon  
All sorts of dresses *pro* and *con* :  
For there's no mystery nor trade,  
But in the art of love is made ;  
And when you have more debts to pay  
'Than Michaelmas and Lady-day,  
And no way possible to do't  
But love and oaths, and restless suit,  
'To us y' apply, to pay the scores  
Of all your cullied past amours ;  
Act o'er your flames and darts again,  
And charge us with your wounds and pain ;  
Which others' influences long since  
Have charmed your noses with, and shins ;  
For which the surgeon is unpaid,  
And like to be, without our aid.  
Lord ! what an amorous thing is want !  
How debts and mortgages enchant !  
What graces must that lady have,  
\*That can from executions save !  
What charms, that can reverse extent,  
And null decree and exigent !  
What magical attracts, and graces,  
That can redeem from *scire facias* !  
From bonds and statutes can discharge,  
And from contempts of courts enlarge !  
These are the highest excellences  
Of all your true or false pretences ;  
And you would damn yourselves, and swear  
As much t' an hostess dowager,  
Grown fat and pursy by retail  
Of pots of beer and bottled ale,  
And find her fitter for your turn,  
For fat is wondrous apt to burn ;  
Who at your flames would soon take fire,  
Relent, and melt to your desire



And, like a candle in the socket,  
Dissolve her graces int' your pocket.'

By this time 'twas grown dark and late,  
When th' heard a knocking at the gate,  
Laid on in haste, with such a powder,  
The blows grew louder still and louder ;  
Which Hudibras, as if th' had been  
Bestowed as freely on his skin,  
Expounding by his inward light,  
Or rather more prophetic fright,  
To be the wizard, come to search,  
And take him napping in the lurch,  
'Turned pale as ashes, or a clout ;  
But why, or wherefore, is a doubt :  
For men will tremble, and turn paler,  
With too much, or too little valour.  
His heart laid on, as if it tried  
'To force a passage through his side,  
Impatient, as he vowed, to wait 'em,  
But in a fury to fly at 'em,  
And therefore beat, and laid about,  
'To find a cranny to creep out.  
But she, who saw in what a taking  
'The knight was by his furious quaking,  
Undaunted cried, ' Courage, Sir Knight,  
Know I'm resolved to break no rite  
Of hospitality t' a stranger ;  
But, to secure you out of danger,  
Will here myself stand sentinel,  
To guard this pass 'gainst Sidrophel :  
Women, you know, do seldom fail  
To make the stoutest men turn tail,  
And bravely scorn to turn their backs,  
Upon the desp'ratest attacks.'

At this the knight grew resolute  
As Ironside, or Hardiknute ;  
His fortitude began to rally,  
And out he cried aloud, to sally ;  
But she besought him to convey  
His courage rather out o' th' way,  
And lodge in ambush on the floor,  
Or fortified behind a door,

That, if the enemy should enter,  
He might relieve her in th' adventure.

Mean while they knocked against the door,  
As fierce as at the gate before ;  
Which made the renegado knight  
Relapse again t' his former fright.  
He thought it desperate to stay  
Till th' enemy had forced his way,  
But rather post himself, to serve  
The lady for a fresh reserve.  
His duty was not to dispute,  
But what sh' had ordered execute ;  
Which he resolved in haste t' obey,  
And therefore stoutly marched away,  
And all h' encountered fell upon,  
Though in the dark, and all alone ;  
'Till fear, that braver feats performs  
Than ever courage dared in arms,  
Had drawn him up before a pass,  
'To stand upon his guard, and face ;  
'Tis he courageously invaded,  
And, having entered, barricadoed  
Enconced himself as formidable  
As could be underneath a table ;  
Where he lay down in ambush close,  
'T' expect th' arrival of his foes.  
Few minutes he had lain *perdue*,  
'To guard his desperate avenue,  
Before he heard a dreadful shout,  
As loud as putting to the rout,  
With which impatiently alarmed,  
He fancied th' enemy had stormed,  
And, after entering, Sidrophel  
Was fallen upon the guards pell-mell :  
He therefore sent out all his senses  
To bring him in intelligences,  
Which vulgars, out of ignorance,  
Mistake for falling in a trance ;  
But those that trade in geomancy,  
Affirm to be the strength of fancy ;  
In which the Lapland Magi deal,  
And things incredible reveal.

Mean while the foe beat up his quarters,  
And stormed the outworks of his fortress ;  
And as another of the same  
Degree and party, in arms and fame,  
That in the same cause had engaged,  
And war with equal conduct waged,  
By venturing only but to thrust  
His head a span beyond his post,  
B' a general of the cavaliers  
Was dragged through a window by the ears ;  
So he was served in his redoubt,  
And by the other end pulled out.

Soon as they had him at their mercy,  
They put him to the cudgel fiercely,  
As if they scorned to trade or barter,  
By giving, or by taking quarter ;  
They stoutly on his quarters laid,  
Until his scouts came in t' his aid :  
For when a man is past his sense,  
There's no way to reduce him thence,  
But twinging him by th' ears or nose,  
Or laying on of heavy blows ;  
And if that will not do the deed,  
To burning with hot irons proceed.

No sooner was he come t' himself,  
But on his neck a sturdy elf  
Clapped in a trice his cloven hoof,  
And thus attacked him with reproof :

‘ Mortal, thou art betrayed to us  
B' our friend, thy evil genius,  
Who for thy horrid perjuries,  
Thy breach of faith, and turning lies,  
The brethren's privilege, against  
The wicked, on themselves, the saints,  
Has here thy wretched carcass sent,  
For just revenge and punishment ;  
Which thou hast now no way to lessen,  
But by an open, free confession ;  
For if we catch thee failing once,  
'Twill fall the heavier on thy bones.  
What made thee venture to betray,  
And filch the lady's heart away,

To spirit her to matrimony? '—

'That which contracts all matches, money.  
It was the enchantment of her riches,  
That made m' apply t' your crony witches ;  
That in return would pay th' expense,  
The wear and tear of conscience,  
Which I could have patched up, and turned,  
For th' hundredth part of what I earned.'

'Didst thou not love her then? Speak true.'

'No more,' quoth he, 'than I love you.'

'How wouldst th' have used her and her money?'

'First turned her up to alimony,  
And laid her dowry out in law,  
To null her jointure with a flaw,  
Which I beforehand had agreed  
T' have put, on purpose, in the deed,  
And bar her widow's-making-over  
T' a friend in trust, or private lover.'

'What made thee pick and chuse her out  
T' employ their sorceries about?'

'That which makes gamesters play with those  
Who have least wit, and most to lose.'

'But didst thou scourge thy vessel thus,  
As thou hast damned thyself to us?'

'I see you take me for an ass :

'Tis true, I thought the trick would pass  
Upon a woman, well enough,  
As 't has often been found by proof,  
Whose humours are not to be won  
But when they are imposed upon ;  
For love approves of all they do  
That stand for candidates, and woo.'

'Why didst thou forge those shameful lies  
Of bears and witches in disguise?'

'That is no more than authors give  
The rabble credit to believe ;  
A trick of following the leaders,  
To entertain their gentle readers :  
And we have now no other way  
Of passing all we do or say ;  
Which, when 'tis natural and true,  
Will be believed b' a very few,

Beside the danger of offence,  
The fatal enemy of sense.'

'Why didst thou chuse that cursèd sin,  
Hypocrisy, to set up in?'

'Because it is the thriving'st calling,  
The only saints-bell that rings all in;  
In which all churches are concerned,  
And is the easiest to be learned:  
For no degrees, unless th' employ't,  
Can ever gain much, or enjoy it:  
A gift that is not only able  
To domineer among the rabble,  
But by the laws impow'erd to rout,  
And awe the greatest that stand out;  
Which few hold forth against, for fear  
Their hands should slip, and come too near;  
For no sin else, among the saints,  
Is taught so tenderly against.'

'What made thee break thy plighted vows?'  
'That which makes others break a house,  
And hang, and scorn ye all, before  
Endure the plague of being poor.'

Quoth he, 'I see you have more tricks  
Than all our doting politics,  
That are grown old, and out of fashion,  
Compared with your new reformation;  
'That we must come to school to you,  
To learn your more refined and new.'

Quoth he, 'If you will give me leave  
To tell you what I now perceive,  
You'll find yourself an errant chouse,  
If y' were but at a meeting-house.'

'Tis true,' quoth he, 'we ne'er come there,  
Because w' have let 'em out by th' year.'

'Truly,' quoth he, 'you can't imagine  
What wondrous things they will engage in;  
That as your fellow-fiends in hell  
Were angels all before they fell,  
So are you like to be again  
Compared with th' angels of us men.'

Quoth he, 'I am resolved to be  
Thy scholar in this mystery;

And therefore first desire to know  
Some principles on which you go.

‘What makes a knave a child of God,  
And one of us?’—‘A livelihood.’

‘What renders beating out of brains,  
And murder, godliness?’—‘Great gains.’

‘What’s tender conscience?’—‘’Tis a botch  
That will not bear the gentlest touch ;  
But, breaking out, despatches more  
Than th’ epidemical’st plague-sore.’

‘What makes y’ inroach upon our trade,  
And damn all others?’—‘To be paid.’

‘What’s orthodox and true believing  
Against a conscience?’—‘A good living.’

‘What makes rebelling against kings  
A good old cause?’—‘Administrings.’

‘What makes all doctrines plain and clear?’  
‘About two hundred pounds a-year.’

‘And that which was proved true before,  
Prove false again?’—‘Two hundred more.’

‘What makes the breaking of all oaths  
A holy duty?’—‘Food and clothes.’

‘What laws and freedom, persecution?’  
‘Being out of power, and contribution.’

‘What makes a church a den of thieves?’  
• ‘A dean and chapter, and white sleeves.’

‘And what would serve, if those were gone,  
To make it orthodox?’—‘Our own.’

‘What makes morality a crime,  
The most notorious of the time ;  
Morality, which both the saints  
And wicked too cry out against?’

‘Cause grace and virtue are within  
Prohibited degrees of kin ;  
And therefore no true saint allows  
They shall be suffered to espouse :  
For saints can need no conscience,  
That with morality dispense ;  
As virtue’s impious, when ’tis rooted  
In nature only, and not imputed :  
But why the wicked should do so,  
We neither know, nor care to do.’

‘What’s liberty of conscience,  
I’ th’ natural and genuine sense?’

‘Tis to restore, with more security,  
Rebellion to its ancient purity;  
And Christian liberty reduce  
‘To th’ elder practice of the Jews;  
For a large conscience is all one,  
And signifies the same with none.’

‘It is enough,’ quoth he, ‘for once,  
And has reprieved thy forfeit bones:  
Nick Machiavel had ne’er a trick,  
Though he gave ’s name to our Old Nick,  
But was below the least of these,  
That pass i’ th’ world for holiness.’

This said the furies, and the light  
In th’ instant vanished out of sight,  
And left him in the dark alone,  
With stinks of brimstone, and his own.

The queen of night, whose large command  
Rules all the sea, and half the land,  
And over moist and crazy brains,  
In high spring-tides, at midnight reigns,  
Was now declining to the west,  
‘To go to bed and take her rest;  
When Hudibras, whose stubborn blows  
Denied his bones that soft repose,  
Lay still expecting worse and more,  
Stretched out at length upon the floor;  
And though he shut his eyes as fast  
As if h’ had been to sleep his last,  
Saw all the shapes that fear or wizards,  
Do make the devil wear for vizards,  
And pricking up his ears, to hark  
If he could hear, too, in the dark,  
Was first invaded with a groan,  
And after, in a feeble tone,  
‘These trembling words: ‘Unhappy wretch,  
What hast thou gotten by this fetch,  
Or all thy tricks, in this new trade,  
‘Thy holy brotherhood o’ th’ blade?  
By sauntering still on some adventure,  
An.<sup>d</sup> growing to thy horse a centaur?’

To stuff thy skin with swelling knobs  
 Of cruel and hard-wooded drubs ?  
 For still th' hast had the worst on't yet,  
 As well in conquest as defeat :  
 Night is the sabbath of mankind,  
 To rest the body and the mind,  
 Which now thou art denied to keep,  
 And cure thy laboured corpse with sleep.'

The knight, who heard the words, explained  
 As meant to him this reprimand,  
 Because the character did hit  
 Point-blank upon his case so fit ;  
 Believed it was some drolling spright  
 'That stayed upon the guard that night,  
 And one of those h' had seen, and felt  
 The drubs he had so freely dealt ;  
 When, after a short pause and groan,  
 The doleful Spirit thus went on :

'This 'tis t' engage with dogs and bears  
 Pell-mell together by the ears,  
 And, after painful bangs and knocks,  
 To lie in limbo in the stocks,  
 And from the pinnacle of glory  
 Fall headlong into purgatory : '—  
 (Thought he, 'This devil's full of malice  
 \*That on my late disasters rallies.')

'Condemned to whipping, but declined it,  
 By being more heroic-minded ;  
 And at a riding handled worse,  
 With treats more slovenly and coarse ;  
 Engaged with fiends in stubborn wars,  
 And hot disputes with conjurers ;  
 And, when th' hadst bravely won the day,  
 Wast fain to steal thyself away.'

('I see,' thought he, 'this shameless elf  
 Would fain steal me too from myself,  
 That impudently dares to own  
 What I have suffered for and done.')

'And now, but venturing to betray,  
 Hast met with vengeance the same way.'

Thought he, 'How does the devil know  
 What 'twas that I designed to do ?



His office of intelligence,  
His oracles, are ceased long since ;  
And he knows nothing of the saints,  
But what some treacherous spy acquaints.  
This is some pettifogging fiend,  
Some under door-keeper's friend's friend,  
'That undertakes to understand,  
And juggles at the second hand.  
And now would pass for spirit Po,  
And all men's dark concerns foreknow.  
I think I need not fear him for't ;  
'These rallying devils do not hurt.'  
With that he roused his drooping heart,  
And hastily cried out, 'What art ?'

'A wretch,' quoth he, 'whom want of grace  
Has brought to this unhappy place.'

'I do believe thee,' quoth the knight ;  
'Thus far I'm sure thou'rt in the right :  
And know what 'tis that troubles thee,  
Better than thou hast guessed of me.  
'Thou art some paltry, blackguard sprite,  
Condemned to drudgery in the night ;  
'Thou hast no work to do in th' house,  
Nor halfpenny to drop in shoes ;  
Without the raising of which sum  
You dare not be so troublesome  
To pinch the slatterns black and blue,  
For leaving you their work to do.  
This is your business, good Pug-Robin,  
And your diversion dull dry bobbing,  
'T' entice fanatics in the dirt,  
And wash 'em clean in ditches for't ;  
Of which conceit you are so proud,  
At every jest you laugh aloud,  
As now you would have done by me,  
But that I barred your raillery.'

'Sir,' quoth the Voice, 'y' are no such sophy,  
As you would have the world judge of ye.  
If you design to weigh our talents  
I' th' standard of your own false balance,  
Or think it possible to know  
Us ghosts, as well as we do you,

We who have been the everlasting  
Companions of your drubs and basting,  
And never left you in contest  
With male or female, man or beast,  
But proved as true t' ye, and entire,  
In all adventures, as your squire.'

Quoth he, 'That may be said as true  
By th' idlest pug of all your crew ;  
For none could have betrayed us worse  
'Than those allies of ours and yours.  
But I have sent him for a token  
'To your low-country Hogen-Mogen,  
'To whose infernal shores I hope  
He'll swing like skippers in a rope :  
And if ye've been more just to me,  
As I am apt to think, than he,  
I am afraid it is as true  
What th' ill-affected say of you ;  
Y' have 'sposed the covenant and cause,  
By holding up your cloven paws.'

'Sir,' quoth the Voice, 'tis true, I grant,  
We made, and took the covenant ;  
But that no more concerns the cause,  
'Than other perjuries do the laws,  
Which, when they're proved in open court,  
Wear wooden peccadilloes for't :  
And that's the reason cov'nanters  
Hold up their hands, like rogues at bars.'

'I see,' quoth Hudibras, 'from whence  
'These scandals of the saints commence,  
'That are but natural effects  
Of Satan's malice, and his sects,  
'Those spider-saints, that hang by threads  
Spun out o' th' entrails of their heads.'

'Sir,' quoth the Voice, 'that may as true  
And properly be said of you,  
Whose talents may compare with either,  
Or both the other put together :  
For all the independents do,  
Is only what you forced 'em to ;  
You, who are not content alone  
With tricks to put the devil down,

But must have armies raised to back  
The gospel-work you undertake ;  
As if artillery and edge-tools,  
Were th' only engines to save souls :  
While he, poor devil, has no power  
By force to run down and devour ;  
Has ne'er a classis, cannot sentence  
To stools, or poundage of repentance ;  
Is tied up only to design,  
T' entice, and tempt, and undermine :  
In which you all his arts outdo,  
And prove yourselves his betters too.  
Hence 'tis possessions do less evil  
Than mere temptations of the devil,  
Which all the horrid'st actions done  
Are charged in courts of law upon ;  
Because, unless they help the elf,  
He can do little of himself ;  
And, therefore, where he's best possessed,  
Acts most against his interest ;  
Surprises none but those who've priests  
To turn him out, and exorcists,  
Supplied with spiritual provision,  
And magazines of ammunition ;  
With crosses, relics, crucifixes,  
Beads, pictures, rosaries, and pixes ;  
The tools of working our salvation  
By mere mechanic operation :  
With holy water, like a sluice,  
To overflow all avenues :  
But those who're utterly unarmed,  
T' oppose his entrance, if he stormed,  
He never offers to surprise,  
Although his falsest enemies ;  
But is content to be their drudge,  
And on their errands glad to trudge :  
For where are all your forfeitures  
Intrusted in safe hands, but ours ?  
Who are but jailers of the holes  
And dungeons where you clap up souls ;  
Like under-keepers, turn the keys  
T' your mittimus anathemas,

And never boggle to restore  
The members you deliver o'er  
Upon demand, with fairer justice,  
Than all your covenanting trustees ;  
Unless, to punish them the worse,  
You put them in the secular powers,  
And pass their souls, as some demise  
The same estate in mortgage twice ;  
When to a legal utlegation  
You turn your excommunication,  
And, for a groat unpaid that's due,  
Distrain on soul and body too.'

Thought he, 'Tis no mean part of civil  
State-prudence to cajole the devil,  
And not to handle him too rough,  
When h' has us in his cloven hoof.'

'Tis true,' quoth he, 'that intercourse  
Has passed between your friends and ours,  
That, as you trust us, in our way,  
To raise your members, and to lay,  
We send you others of our own,  
Denounced to hang themselves, or drown,  
Or, frightened with our oratory,  
To leap down headlong many a story ;  
Have used all means to propagate  
Your mighty interests of state,  
Laid out our spiritual gifts to further  
Your great designs of rage and murther :  
For if the saints are named from blood,  
We only 'ave made that title good ;  
And, if it were but in our power,  
We should not scruple to do more,  
And not be half a soul behind  
Of all dissenters of mankind.'

'Right,' quoth the Voice, 'and, as I scorn  
To be ungrateful, in return  
Of all those kind good offices,  
I'll free you out of this distress,  
And set you down in safety,—where,  
It is no time to tell you here.  
The cock crows, and the morn draws on,  
When 'tis decreed I must be gone ;

And if I leave you here till day,  
You'll find it hard to get away.'

With that the Spirit groped about  
To find th' enchanted hero out,  
And tried with haste to lift him up,  
But found his forlorn hope, his crup,  
Unserviceable with kicks and blows,  
Received from hardened-hearted foes.  
He thought to drag him by the heels,  
Like Gresham-carts, with legs for wheels :  
But fear, that soonest cures those sores,  
In danger of relapse to worse,  
Came in t' assist him with its aid,  
And up his sinking vessel weighed.  
No sooner was he fit to trudge,  
But both made ready to dislodge ;  
'The Spirit horsed him, like a sack,  
Upon the vehicle his back,  
And bore him headlong into th' hall,  
With some few rubs against the wall :  
Where finding out the postern locked,  
And th' avenues as strongly blocked,  
H' attacked the window, stormed the glass,  
And in a moment gained the pass ;  
Through which he dragged the worsted soldier's  
Fore-quarters out by th' head and shoulders,  
And cautiously began to scout  
To find their fellow-cattle out ;  
Nor was it half a minute's quest,  
Ere he retrieved the champion's beast,  
Tied to a pale, instead of rack,  
But ne'er a saddle on his back,  
Nor pistols at the saddle bow,  
Conveyed away, the Lord knows how.  
He thought it was no time to stay,  
And let the night, too, steal away ;  
But, in a trice, advanced the knight  
Upon the bare ridge, bolt upright,  
And, groping out for Ralpho's jade,  
He found the saddle, too, was strayed,  
And in the place a lump of soap,  
On which he speedily leaped up ;

And, turning to the gate the rein,  
He kicked and cudgelled on amain ;  
While Hudibras, with equal haste,  
On both sides laid about as fast,  
And spurred, as jockies use, to break,  
Or padders to secure, a neck :  
Where let us leave 'em for a time,  
And to their churches turn our rhyme ;  
To hold forth their declining state,  
Which now come near an even rate.

## CANTO II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The saints engage in fierce contests  
About their carnal interests,  
To share their sacrilegious preys  
According to their rates of grace :  
Their various frenzies to reform,  
When Cromwell left them in a storm ;  
'Till, in th' effigy of Rumps, the rabble  
Burn all their grandees of the càbal.

THE learnèd write, an insect breeze  
Is but a mongrel prince of bees,  
That falls before a storm on cows,  
And stings the founders of his house ,  
From whose corrupted flesh that breed  
Of vermin did at first proceed.  
So, ere the storm of war broke out,  
Religion spawned a various rout  
Of petulant capricious sects,  
The maggots of corrupted texts,  
That first run all religion down,  
And after every swarm its own :  
For as the Persian Magi once  
Upon their mothers got their sons,  
That were incapable t' enjoy  
That empire any other way ;  
So presbyter begot the other  
Upon the good old Cause, his mother,  
Then bore them like the devil's dam,  
Whose son and husband are the same ;  
And yet no natural tie of blood,  
Nor interest for the common good,  
Could, when their profits interfered,  
Get quarter for each other's beard :  
For when they thrived they never fadged,  
But only by the ears engaged ;

Like dogs that snarl about a bone,  
And play together when they've none ;  
As by their truest characters,  
Their constant actions, plainly appears.  
Rebellion now began, for lack  
Of zeal and plunder, to grow slack ;  
The cause and covenant to lessen,  
And prov'dence to be out of season :  
For now there was no more to purchase  
O' th' king's revenue, and the church's,  
But all divided, shared, and gone,  
That used to urge the brethren on ;  
Which forced the stubborn'st for the cause,  
To cross the cudgels to the laws,  
That what by breaking them th' had gained  
By their support might be maintained ;  
Like thieves, that in a hemp-plot lie,  
Secured against the hue-and-cry ;  
For presbyter and independent  
Were now turned plaintiff and defendant ;  
Laid out their apostolic functions  
On carnal orders and injunctions ;  
And all their precious gifts and graces  
On outlawries and *scire facias* :  
At Michael's term had many trial,  
• Worse than the Dragon and St. Michael,  
Where thousands fell, in shape of fees,  
Into the bottomless abyss.  
For when, like brethren, and like friends,  
'They came to share their dividends,  
And every partner to possess  
His church and state joint-purchases,  
In which the ablest saint, and best,  
Was named in trust by all the rest,  
'To pay their money, and, instead  
Of every brother, pass the deed ;  
He straight converted all his gifts  
To pious frauds, and holy shifts,  
And settled all the other shares  
Upon his outward man and 's heirs ;  
Held all they claimed as forfeit lands  
Delivered up into his hands,



And passed upon his conscience  
By pre-entail of providence ;  
Impeached the rest for reprobates,  
That had no titles to estates,  
But by their spiritual attaints  
Degraded from the right of saints.  
'This being revealed, they now begun  
With law and conscience to fall on,  
And laid about as hot and brain-sick  
As th' utter barrister of Swanswick ;  
Engaged with money-bags, as bold  
As men with sand-bags did of old,  
'That brought the lawyers in more fees  
Than all unsanctified trustees ;  
'Till he who had no more to show  
I' th' case, received the overthrow ;  
Or, both sides having had the worst,  
'They parted as they met at first.  
Poor presbyter was now reduced,  
Secluded, and cashiered, and choused !  
Turned out, and excommunicate  
From all affairs of church and state,  
Reformed t' a reformado saint,  
And glad to turn itinerant,  
To stroll and teach from town to town,  
And those he had taught up, teach down,  
And make those uses serve again  
Against the new-enlightened men,  
As fit as when at first they were  
Revealed against the cavalier ;  
Damn anabaptist and fanatic,  
As pat as popish and prelatie ;  
And, with as little variation,  
To serve for any sect i' th' nation.  
'The good old cause, which some believe  
'To be the devil that tempted Eve  
With knowledge, and docs still invite  
The world to mischief with new light,  
Had store of money in her purse,  
When he took her for better or worse,  
But now was grown deformed and poor,  
And fit to be turned out of door.

The independents (whose first station  
Was in the rear of reformation,  
A mongrel kind of church-dragoons,  
That served for horse and foot at once,  
And in the saddle of one steed  
The Saracen and Christian rid ;  
Were free of every spiritual order,  
To preach, and fight, and pray, and murder :)  
No sooner got the start, to lurch  
Both disciplines of war and church,  
And providence enough to run  
The chief commanders of them down,  
But carried on the war against  
The common enemy o' th' saints,  
And in a while prevailed so far,  
To win of them the game of war,  
And be at liberty once more  
T' attack themselves as th' had before.

For now there was no ice in arms  
T' unite their factions with alarms,  
But all reduced and overcome,  
Except their worst, themselves at home,  
Wh' had compassed all they prayed and swore,  
And fought, and preached, and plundered for,  
Subdued the nation, church, and state,  
And all things but their laws and hate ;  
But when they came to treat and transact,  
And share the spoil of all th' had ransacked,  
To botch up what th' had torn and rent,  
Religion and the government,  
They met no sooner, but prepared  
To pull down all the war had spared ;  
Agreed in nothing, but t' abolish,  
Subvert, extirpate, and demolish :  
For knaves and fools being near of kin,  
As Dutch boors are t' a sooterkin,  
Both parties join'd to do their best  
To damn the public interest,  
And herded only in consultations,  
To put by one another's bolts ;  
T' out-cant the Babylonian labourers,  
At all their dialects of jabberers,

And tug at both ends of the saw,  
To tear down government and law.  
For as two cheats, that play one game,  
Are both defeated of their aim ;  
So those who play a game of state,  
And only cavil in debate,  
Although there's nothing lost nor won,  
'The public business is undone,  
Which still the longer 'tis in doing,  
Becomes the surer way to ruin.

This when the royalists perceived,—  
Who to their faith as firmly cleaved,  
And owned the right they had paid down  
So dearly for, the church and crown—  
'Th' united constanter, and sided  
The more, the more their foes divided :  
For though outnumbered, overthrown  
And by the fate of war run down,  
'Their duty never was defeated,  
Nor from their oaths and faith retreated ;  
For loyalty is still the same,  
Whether it win or lose the game ;  
'True as the dial to the sun,  
Although it be not shined upon.  
But when these bretheren in evil,  
Their adversaries, and the devil,  
Began once more to show them play,  
And hopes, at least, to have a day,  
'They rallied in parades of woods,  
And unfrequented solitudes ;  
Convened at midnight in outhouses,  
T' appoint new-rising rendezvouses ;  
And, with a pertinacy unmatched,  
For new recruits of danger watched.  
No sooner was one blow diverted.  
But up another party started,  
And as if nature too, in haste  
To furnish our supplies as fast,  
Before her time had turned destruction  
'T' a new and numerous production ;  
No sooner those were overcome,  
But up rose others in their room,

That, like the Christian faith, increased  
The more, the more they were suppressed ;  
Whom neither chains, nor transportation,  
Proscription, sale, or confiscation,  
Nor all the desperate events  
Of former tried experiments,  
Nor wounds, could terrify, nor mangling,  
To leave off loyalty and dangling,  
Nor death, with all his bones, affright  
From venturing to maintain the right,  
From staking life and fortune down  
'Gainst all together, for the crown ;  
But kept the title of their cause  
From forfeiture, like claims in laws ;  
And proved no prosperous usurpation  
Can ever settle on the nation ;  
Until, in spite of force and treason,  
They put their loy'lty in possession ;  
And, by their constancy and faith,  
Destroyed the mighty men of Gath.

Tossed in a furious hurricane,  
Did Oliver give up his reign,  
And was believed, as well by saints  
As moral men and miscreants,  
To founder in the Stygian ferry,  
Until he was retrieved by Sterry,  
Who, in a false erroneous dream,  
Mistook the New Jerusalem,  
Profanely for th' apocryphal  
False Heaven at the end o' th' Hall ;  
Whither it was decreed by fate,  
His precious reliques to translate.  
So Romulus was seen before  
B' as orthodox a senator,  
From whose divine illumination  
He stole the pagan revelation.

Next him his son, and heir apparent  
Succeeded, though a lame vicegerent,  
Who first laid by the parliament,  
The only crutch on which he leant,  
And then sunk underneath the state,  
That rode him above horseman's weight.

And now the saints began their reign,  
For which th' had yearned so long in vain,  
And felt such bowel-hankerings,  
To see an empire, all of kings,  
Delivered from th' Egyptian awe  
Of justice, government, and law,  
And free t' erect what spiritual cantons  
Should be revealed, or gospel Hans-Towns.  
To edify upon the ruins  
Of John of Leyden's old outgoings,  
Who for a weather-cock hung up  
Upon their mother-church's top,  
Was made a type by Providence,  
Of all their revelations since,  
And now fulfilled by his successors,  
Who equally mistook their measures :  
For when they came to shape the model,  
Not one could fit another's noddle ;  
But found their light and gifts more wide  
From fadging, than th' unsanctified,  
While every individual brother  
Strove hand to fist against another,  
And still the maddest, and most cracked,  
Were found the busiest to transact ;  
For though most hands despatch apace,  
And make light work, the proverb says,  
Yet many different intellects  
Are found t' have contrary effects ;  
And many heads t' obstruct intrigues,  
As slowest insects have most legs.

Some were for setting up a king,  
But all the rest for no such thing,  
Unless king Jesus : others tampered  
For Flectwood, Desborough, and Lambert ;  
Some for the Rump ; and some more crafty,  
For agitators, and the safety ;  
Some for the gospel, and massacres  
Of spiritual affidavit-makers,  
That swore to any human regence  
Oaths of suprem'cy and allegiance,—  
Yea, though the ablest swearing saint,  
That vouched the bulls o' th' covenant ;

Others for pulling down th' high places  
Of synods and provincial classes,  
That used to make such hostile inroads  
Upon the saints, like bloody Nimrods;  
Some for fulfilling prophecies,  
And th' extirpation of th' excise;  
And some against th' Egyptian bondage  
Of holy-days, and paying poundage;  
Some for the cutting down of groves,  
And rectifying bakers' loaves,  
And some for finding out expedients  
Against the slavery of obedience;  
Some were for gospel-ministers,  
And some for redcoat seculars,  
As men most fit t' hold forth the word,  
And wield the one and th' other sword;  
Some were for carrying on the work  
Against the pope, and some the Turk;  
Some for engaging to suppress  
The camisado of surplices,  
That gifts and dispensations hindered,  
And turned to th' outward man the inward:  
More proper for the cloudy night  
Of popery than gospel light;  
Others were for abolishing  
That tool of matrimony, a ring,  
With which th' unsanctified bridegroom  
Is married only to a thumb,—  
As wise as ringing of a pig,  
That used to break up ground, and dig,—  
The bride to nothing but her will,  
That nulls the after-marriage still;  
Some were for th' utter extirpation  
Of linsey-woolsey in the nation;  
And some against all idolising  
The cross in shop-books, or baptising;  
Others, to make all things recant  
The Christian or surname of saint,  
And force all churches, streets, and towns,  
The holy title to renounce;  
Some 'gainst a third estate of souls,  
And bringing down the price of coals;

Some for abolishing black-pudding,  
And eating nothing with the blood in,  
To abrogate them roots and branches ;  
While others were for eating haunches  
Of warriors, and, now and then,  
The flesh of kings and mighty men ;  
And some for breaking of their bones  
With rods of iron, by secret ones ;  
For thrashing mountains, and with spells  
For hallowing carriers' packs and bells ;  
Things that the legend never heard of,  
But made the wicked sore afraid of.

The quacks of government, who sate  
At the unregarded helm of state,  
And understood this wild confusion  
Of fatal madness and delusion  
Must, sooner than a prodigy,  
Portend destruction to be nigh,  
Considered timely how t' withdraw,  
And save their windpipes from the law ;  
For one rencounter at the bar  
Was worse than all th' had 'scaped in war ;  
And therefore met in consultation  
To cant and quack upon the nation ;  
Not for the sickly patient's sake,  
Nor what to give, but what to take ;  
To feel the purses of their fees,  
More wise than fumbling arteries ;  
Prolong the snuff of life in pain,  
And from the grave recover—gain,  
'Mong these there was a politician,  
With more heads than a beast in vision,  
And more intrigues in every one  
Than all the whores of Babylon ;  
So politic, as if one eye  
Upon the other were a spy,  
That, to trepan the one to think  
The other blind, both strove to blink ;  
And in his dark pragmatic way  
As busy as a child at play.  
H' had seen three governments run down,  
And had a hand in every one :

Was for 'em, and against 'em all,  
But barbarous when they came to fall :  
For by trepanning th' old to ruin,  
He made his interest with the new one ;  
Played true and faithful, though against  
His conscience, and was still advanced :  
For by the witchcraft of rebellion  
'ransformed t' a feeble state-camelion,  
By giving aim from side to side,  
He never failed to save his tide,  
But got the start of every state,  
And, at a change, ne'er came too late ;  
Could turn his word, and oath, and faith,  
As many ways as in a lathe ;  
By turning wriggle, like a screw,  
Int' highest trust, and out, for new ;  
For when h' had happily incurred,  
Instead of hemp, to be preferred,  
And passed upon a government,  
He played his trick, and out he went ;  
But being out, and out of hopes  
To mount his ladder, more, of ropes,  
Would strive to raise himself upon  
The public ruin, and his own ;  
• So little did he understand  
The desperate feats he took in hand,  
For when h' had got himself a name  
For frauds and tricks he spoiled his game ;  
Had forced his neck into a noose,  
To show his play at fast and loose ;  
And, when he chanced t' escape, mistook,  
For art and subtlety, his luck.  
So right his judgment was cut fit,  
And made a tally to his wit,  
And both together most profound  
At deeds of darkness under ground ;  
As th' earth is easiest undermined,  
By vermin impotent and blind.  
By all these arts, and many more,  
H' had practised long and much before,  
Our state-artificer foresaw  
Which way the world began to draw :



For as old sinners have all points  
O' th' compass in their bones and joints,  
Can by their pangs and achès find  
All turns and changes of the wind,  
And, better than by Napier's bones,  
Feel in their own the age of moons :  
So guilty sinners, in a state,  
Can by their crimes prognosticate,  
And in their consciences feel pain,  
Some days before a shower of rain ;  
He therefore wisely cast about  
All ways he could, t' insure his throat,  
And hither came, t' observe and smoke  
What courses other riskers took,  
And to the utmost do his best  
'To save himself, and hang the rest.

'To match this saint there was another  
As busy and perverse a brother,  
An haberdasher of small wares  
In politics and state-affairs ;  
More Jew than rabbi Achitophel,  
And better gifted to rebel ;  
For when h' had taught his tribe to 'spouse  
'The cause, aloft upon one house,  
He scorned to set his own in order,  
But tried another, and went further ;  
So suddenly addicted still  
To 's only principle, his will,  
'That whatsoe'er it chanced to prove,  
No force of argument could move,  
Nor law, nor cavalcade of Holborn,  
Could render half a grain less stuffborn ;  
For he at any time would hang,  
For th' opportunity t' harangue ;  
And rather on a gibbet dangle,  
'Than miss his dear delight, to wrangle ;  
In which his parts were so accomplished,  
'That, right or wrong, he ne'er was nonplussed ;  
But still his tongue ran on, the less  
Of weight it bore, with greater ease ;  
And, with its everlasting clack,  
Set all men's ears upon the rack ;

No sooner could a hint appear,  
But up he started to pickeer,  
And made the stoutest yield to mercy,  
When he engaged in controversy ;  
Not by the force of carnal reason,  
But indefatigable teasing ;  
With volleys of eternal babble,  
And clamour, more unanswerable :  
For though his topics, frail and weak,  
Could ne'er amount above a freak,  
He still maintained 'em, like his faults,  
Against the desp'ratest assaults ;  
And backed their feeble want of sense  
With greater heat and confidence ;  
As bones of Hector's, when they differ,  
The more they're cudgelled, grow the stiffer.  
Yet when his profit moderated,  
The fury of his heat abated ;  
For nothing but his interest  
Could lay his devil of contest :  
It was his choice, or chance, or curse,  
'T' espouse the cause for better or worse,  
And with his worldly goods and wit,  
And soul and body worshipped it :  
But when he found the sullen trapes  
Possessed with th' devil, worms, and japes ;  
The Trojan mare, in foal with Greeks,  
Not half so full of jadish tricks,  
Though squeamish in her outward woman,  
As loose and rampant as Dol Common ;  
He still resolved to mend the matter,  
'T' adhere and cleave the obstinater ;  
And still, the skittisher and looser  
Her freaks appeared, to sit the closer ;  
For fools are stubborn in their way,  
As coins are hardened by th' allay :  
And obstinacy's n'er so stiff,  
As when 'tis in a wrong belief.  
These two, with others, being met,  
And close in consultation set,  
After a discontented pause,  
And not without sufficient cause,

The orator we named of late,  
Less troubled with the pangs of state,  
Than with his own impatience,  
To give himself first audience,  
After he had a while looked wise,  
At last broke silence, and the ice.

Quoth he, 'There's nothing makes me doubt  
Our last outgoings brought about,  
More than to see the characters  
Of real jealousies and fears  
Not feigned, as once, but sadly horrid,  
Scored upon every member's forehead ;  
Who, 'cause the clouds are drawn together,  
And threaten sudden change of weather,  
Feels pangs and achès of state-turns,  
And revolutions in their corns ;  
And, since our workings-out are crossed,  
'Throw up the cause before 'tis lost.  
Was it to run away we meant,  
When, taking of the covenant,  
The lamest cripples of the brothers,  
Took oaths to run before all others,  
But in their own sense, only 'swore,  
To strive to run away before,  
And now would prove, that words and oath  
Engage us to renounce them both ?  
'Tis true the cause is in the lurch,  
Between a right and mongrel-church ;  
The presbyter and independent,  
That stickle which shall make an end on't,  
As 'twas made out to us the last  
Expedient,— I mean Margaret's fast ;  
When Providence had been suborned,  
What answer was to be returned :  
Else why should tumults fright us now,  
We have so many times gone through,  
And understand as well to tame  
As, when they serve our turns, t' inflame ?  
Have proved how inconsiderable  
Are all engagements of the rabble,  
Whose frenzies must be reconciled  
With drums, and rattles, like a child,

But never proved so prosperous,  
As when they were led on by us ;  
For all our scouring of religion  
Began with tumults and sedition ;  
When hurricanes of fierce commotion  
Became strong motives to devotion :  
As carnal seamen in a storm,  
Turn pious converts, and reform ;  
When rusty weapons with chalked edges,  
Maintained our feeble privileges,  
And brown-bills, levied in the city,  
Made bills to pass the grand committee ;  
When zeal, with aged clubs and gleaves,  
Gave chase to rochets, and white sleeves,  
And made the church, and state and laws,  
Submit t' old iron, and the cause.  
And as we thrived by tumults then,  
So might we better know again,  
If we knew how, as then we did,  
To use them rightly in our need ;  
Tumults, by which the mutinous  
Betray themselves instead of us ;  
The hollow-hearted, disaffected,  
And close malignant are detected ;  
Who lay their lives and fortunes down,  
For pledges to secure our own ;  
And freely sacrifice their ears  
T' appease our jealousies and fears.  
And, yet for all these providences  
W' are offered, if we have our senses,  
We idly sit, like stupid blockheads,  
Our hands committed to our pockets,  
And nothing but our tongues at large,  
To get the wretches a discharge :  
Like men condemned to thunder-bolts,  
Who, ere the blow, become mere dolts ;  
Or fools besotted with their crimes,  
That know not how to shift betimes,  
That neither have the hearts to stay,  
Nor wit enough to run away ;  
Who, if we could resolve on either,  
Might stand or fall at least together ;

No mean nor trivial solaces  
To partners in extreme distress ;  
Who used to lessen their despairs,  
By parting them int' equal shares ;  
As if the more there were to bear,  
They felt the weight the easier ;  
And every one the gentler hung,  
The more he took his turn among.  
*But 'tis not come to that, as yet,*  
*If we had courage left, or wit,*  
Who, when our fate can be no worse,  
Are fitted for the bravest course,  
Have time to rally, and prepare  
Our last and best defence, despair :  
Despair, by which the gallant'st feats  
Have been achieved in greatest straits,  
And horrid'st dangers safely waived,  
By being courageously outbraved ;  
As wounds by wider wounds are healed,  
And poisons by themselves expelled :  
And so they might be now again,  
If we were, what we should be, men ;  
And not so dully desperate,  
To side against ourselves with fate :  
As criminals, condemned to suffer,  
Are blinded first, and then turned over.  
This comes of breaking covenants,  
And setting up exempts of saints,  
That fine, like aldermen, for grace,  
'To be excused the efficacy :  
*For spiritual men are too transcendent,*  
*That mount their banks for independent,*  
*To hang, like Mahomet in the air,†*  
Or St. Ignatius at his prayer,  
By pure geometry, and hate  
Dependence upon church or state :  
Disdain the pedantry o' th' letter,  
And since obedience is better,  
The Scripture says, than sacrifice,  
Presume the less on't will suffice ;  
And scorn to have the moderat'st stints  
Prescribed their peremptory hints,

Or any opinion, true or false,  
Declared as such, in doctrinals ;  
But left at large to make their best on,  
Without being called t' account or quest'on :  
Interpret all the spleen reveals,  
As Whittington explained the bells ;  
And bid themselves turn back again  
Lord Mayors of New Jerusalem ;  
*But look so big and overgrown,*  
*They scorn their edifiers to own,*  
Who taught them all their sprinkling lessons,  
Their tones, and sanctified expressions ;  
Bestowed their gifts upon a saint,  
Like charity, on those that want ;  
And learned the apocryphal bigòts  
T' inspire themselves with short-hand notes,  
For which they scorn and hate them worse  
Than dogs and cats do sow-gelders :  
I'or who first bred them up to pray,  
And teach the House of Commons' way ?  
Where had they all their gifted phrases,  
But from our Calamys and Cases ?  
Without whose sprinkleing and sowing,  
Who e'er had heard of Nye or Owen ?  
Their dispensations had been stilled,  
But for our Adoniram Byfield ;  
And had they not begun the war,  
Th' had ne'er been sainted as they are :  
For saints in peace degenerate,  
And dwindle down to reprobate ;  
Their zeal corrupts, like standing water,  
In th' intervals of war and slaughter ;  
Abates the sharpness of its edge,  
Without the power of sacrilege ;  
And though they've tricks to cast their sins,  
As easy as serpents do their skins,  
That in a while grow out again,  
In peace they turn mere carnal men,  
And from the most refined of saints  
As naturally grow miscreants  
As barnacles turn solan geese  
I' th' islands of the Orcades.

Their dispensation's but a ticket  
For their conforming to the wicked,  
With whom their greatest difference  
Lies more in words and show, than sense :  
For as the Pope, that keeps the gate  
Of heaven, wears three crowns of state ;  
So he that keeps the gate of hell,  
Proud Cerb'rus, wears three heads as well ;  
And, if the world has any troth,  
Some have been canonized in both.  
But that which does them greatest harm,  
Their spiritual gizzards are too warm,  
Which puts the overheated sots  
In fever still, like other goats ;  
For though the whore bends heretics  
Which flames of fire, like crooked sticks,  
Our schismatics so vastly differ,  
Th' hotter th' are they grow the stiffer ;  
Still setting off their spiritual goods,  
With fierce and pertinacious feuds :  
For zeal's a dreadful termagant,  
That teaches saints to tear and rant,  
And independents to profess  
The doctrine of dependences ;  
Turns meek, and secret, sneaking ones,  
To rawheads fierce, and bloody bones ;  
And not content with endless quarrels  
Against the wicked, and their morals,  
The Gibellines, for want of Guelfs,  
Divert their rage upon themselves.  
For, now the war is not between  
The brethren and the men of siff,  
But saint and saint to spill the blood  
Of one another's brotherhood,  
Where neither side can lay pretence  
To liberty of conscience,  
Or zealous suffering for the cause,  
To gain one groat's worth of applause ;  
For, though endur'd with resolution,  
'Twill ne'er amount to persecution ;  
Shall precious saints, and secret ones,  
Break one another's outward bones,

And eat the flesh of bretheren,  
Instead of kings and mighty men?  
When fiends agree among themselves,  
Shall they be found the greater elves?  
When Bell's at union with the Dragon,  
And Baal-Peor friends with Dagon;  
When savage bears agree with bears,  
Shall secret ones lug saints by th' ears,  
And not atone their fatal wrath,  
When common danger threatens both?  
Shall mastiffs, by the collars pulled,  
Engaged with bulls, let go their hold?  
And saints, whose necks are pawned at stake,  
No notice of the danger take?  
But though no power of heaven or hell  
Can pacify fanatic zeal,  
Who would not guess there might be hopes  
'The fear of gallowses and ropes  
Before their eyes, might reconcile  
'Their animosities a while;  
At least until th' had a clear stage,  
And equal freedom to engage,  
Without the danger of surprise  
By both our common enemies?

'This none but we alone could doubt  
Who understand their workings-out,  
And know 'em, both in soul and conscience,  
Giv'n up t' as reprobate a nonsense  
As spiritual outlaws, whom the power  
Of miracle can ne'er restore.  
We, whom at first they set up under  
In revelation only of plunder,  
Who since have had so many trials  
Of their encroaching self-denials,  
That rooked upon us with design  
To out-reform, and undermine;  
Took all our interests and commands  
Perfidiously, out of our hands;  
Involved us in the guilt of blood,  
Without the motive gains allowed,  
And made us serve as ministerial,  
Like younger sons of father Belial,



And yet, for all th' inhuman wrong,  
Th' had done us, and the cause so long,  
We never failed to carry on  
The work still, as we had begun ;  
But true and faithfully obeyed,  
And neither preached them hurt, nor prayed ;  
Nor troubled them to crop our ears,  
Nor hang us, like the cavaliers ;  
Nor put them to the charge of jails,  
To find us pillories and carts'-tails,  
Or hangman's wages, which the state  
Was forced, before them, to be at ;  
'That cut, like tallies, to the stumps,  
Our ears for keeping true accounts,  
And burned our vessels, like a new  
Sealed peck, or bushel, for being true ;  
But hand in hand, like faithful brothers,  
Held for the cause against all others,  
Disdaining equally to yield  
One syllable of what we held.  
And though we differed now and then  
'Bout outward things, and outward men,  
Our inward men, and constant frame  
Of spirit still were near the same ;  
And till they first began to cant,  
And sprinkle down the covenant,  
We ne'er had call in any place,  
Nor dreamed of teaching down free grace ;  
But joined our gifts perpetually  
Against the common enemy,  
Although 'twas ours, and their opinion,  
Each other's church was but a Rixmon.  
And yet, for all this gospel-union,  
And outward show of church-communion,  
They'd ne'er admit us to our shares,  
Of ruling church, or state affairs,  
Nor give us leave t' absolve, or sentence  
T' our own conditions of repentance ;  
But shared our dividend o' the crown  
We had so painfully preached down,  
And forced us, though against the grain,  
T' have calls to teach it up again.

For 'twas but justice to restore  
'The wrongs we had received before ;  
And when 'twas held forth in our way,  
W' had been ungrateful not to pay ;  
Who for the right we've done the nation,  
Have earned our temporal salvation,  
And put our vessels in a way,  
Once more to come again in play :  
For if the turning of us out,  
Has brought this providence about,  
And that our only suffering  
Is able to bring in the king,  
What would our actions not have done,  
Had we been suffered to go on ?  
And therefore may pretend t' a share,  
At least, in carrying on th' affair :  
But whether that be so, or not,  
We've done enough to have it thought,  
And that's as good as if w' had done 't,  
And easier passed upon account :  
For if it be but half denied,  
'Tis half as good as justified.  
The world is naturally averse,  
'To all the truth it sees or hears,  
But swallows nonsense and a lie  
With greediness and gluttony ;  
And though it have the pique, and long,  
'Tis still for something in the wrong ;  
As women long, when they're with child,  
For things extravagant and wild ;  
For meats ridiculous and fulsome,  
But seldom any thing that's wholesome ;  
And, like the world, men's jobbernoles  
Turn round upon their ears, the poles,  
And what they're confidently told,  
By no sense else can be controlled.

' And this, perhaps, may prove the means  
Once more to hedge in Providence.  
For as relapses make diseases  
More desperate than their first accesses ;  
If we but get again in power,  
Our work is easier than before ;

And we more ready and expert  
I' th' mystery, to do our part :  
We, who did rather undertake  
The first war to create, than make ;  
And when of nothing 'twas begun,  
Raised funds as strange, to carry 't on ;  
Trepanned the state, and faced it down,  
With plots and projects of our own ;  
And if we did such feats at first,  
What can we now we're better versed ?  
Who have a freer latitude  
Than sinners give themselves, allowed ;  
And therefore likeliest to bring in,  
On fairest terms, our discipline ;  
To which it was revealed long since  
We were ordained by Providence,  
When three saints' ears, our predecessors  
The Cause's primitive confessors,  
B'ing crucified, the nation stood  
In just so many years of blood,  
That, multiplied by six, expressed  
The perfect number of the beast,  
And proved that we must be the men  
To bring this work about again ;  
And those who laid the first foundation,  
Complete the thorough reformation :  
For who have gifts to carry on  
So great a work, but we alone ?  
What churches have such able pastors,  
And precious, powerful, preaching masters ?  
Possessed with absolute dominions,  
O'er brethren's purses and opinions,  
And trusted with the double keys  
Of heaven, and their warehouses ;  
Who, when the cause is in distress,  
Can furnish out what sums they please,  
That brooding lie in banker's hands,  
To be disposed at their commands ;  
And daily increase and multiply,  
With doctrine, use, and usury :  
Can fetch in parties, as, in war  
All other heads of cattle are,

From th' enemy of all religions,  
As well as high and low conditions,  
And share them, from blue ribands down  
To all blue aprons in the town ;  
From ladies hurried in caleches,  
With cornets at their footmen's breeches,  
To queans as fat as mother Nab,  
All case and body, like a crab.  
Our party's great, and better tied  
With oaths, and trade, than any side ;  
Has one considerable improvement  
To double fortify the covenant ;  
I mean our covenant to purchase  
Delinquents' titles, and the church's,  
That pass in sale, from hand to hand,  
Among ourselves, for current land,  
And rise or fall, like Indian actions,  
According to the rate of factions ;  
Our best reserve for reformation,  
When new outgoings give occasion ;  
That keeps the loins of brethren girt,  
The covenant, their creed, t' assert ;  
And, when they've packed a parliament,  
Will once more try th' expedient :  
Who can already muster friends,  
• To serve for members to our ends,  
That represent no part o' th' nation,  
But Fisher's-folly congregation ;  
Are only tools to our intrigues,  
And sit like geese to hatch our eggs ;  
Who, by their precedence of wit,  
T' outfast, outloiter, and outfit,  
And order matters under hand,  
To put all business to a stand ;  
Lay public bills aside, for private,  
And make 'em one another drive out ;  
Divert the great and necessary,  
With trifles to contest and vary ;  
And make the nation represent,  
And serve for us in parliament ;  
Cut out more work than can be done  
In Plato's year, but finish none,

Unless it be the bulls of Lenthal,  
That always passed for fundamental :  
Can set up grandee against grandee,  
To squander time away, and bandy ;  
Make lords and commoners lay sieges  
To one another's privileges :  
And, rather than compound the quarrel,  
Engage, to th' inevitable peril  
Of both their ruins, th' only scope  
And consolation of our hope :  
Who, though we do not play the game,  
Assist us much by giving aim ;  
Can introduce our ancient arts,  
For heads of factions t' act their parts ;  
Know what a leading voice is worth,  
A seconding, a third, or fourth ;  
How much a casting voice comes to,  
'That turns up trump of *Ay* or *No* ;  
And, by adjusting all at th' end,  
Share every one his dividend.  
An art that so much study cost,  
And now's in danger to be lost,  
Unless our ancient virtuosos,  
That found it out, get into th' houses.  
'These are the courses that we took  
To carry things by hook or crook,  
And practised down from forty-four,  
Unless they turned us out of door :  
Beside the herds of Boutèfeus  
We set on work, without the house,  
When every knight and citizen  
Kept legislative journeymen,  
To bring them in intelligence,  
From all points of the rabble's *seignior*,  
And fill the lobbies of both houses  
With politic important buzzes ;  
Set up committees of cabals,  
To pack designs without the walls ;  
Examine and draw up all news,  
And fit it to our present use ;  
Agree upon the plot o' the farce,  
And every one his part rehearse ;

Make Qs of answers, to waylay  
What th' other party's like to say ;  
With repartees, and smart reflections,  
Shall be returned to all objections :  
And who shall break the master-jest,  
And what, and how, upon the rest ;  
Help pamphlets out, with safe editions,  
Of proper slanders and seditious,  
And treason for a token send,  
By letter, to a country friend ;  
Disperse lampoons, the only wit  
That men, like burglary, commit,  
With falser than a padder's face,  
That all its owner does betrays :  
Who therefore dares not trust it, when  
He's in his calling, to be seen.  
Disperse the dung on barren earth,  
To bring new weeds of discord forth ;  
Be sure to keep up congregations,  
In spite of laws and proclamations :  
For charlatans can do no good,  
Until they're mounted in a crowd ;  
And when they're punished, all the hurt  
Is but to fare the better for't ;  
As long as confessors are sure  
Of double pay for all th' endure,  
And what they earn in persecution,  
Are paid t' a groat in contribution :  
Whence some tub-holders-forth have made  
In powdering-tubs their richest trade ;  
And, while they keep their shops in prison,  
Have found their prices strangely risen,  
Disdain to own the least regret  
For all the Christian blood we've let ;  
'Twill save our credit, and maintain  
Our title to do so again ;  
That needs not cost one dram of sense,  
But pertinacious impudence.  
Our constancy t' our principles,  
In time will wear out all things else ;  
Like marble statues, rubbed in pieces  
With gallantry of pilgrims' kisses ;

While those who turn and wind their oaths,  
Have swelled and sunk, like other froths ;  
Prevailed a while, but 'twas not long  
Before from world to world they swung ;  
As they had turned from side to side,  
And as the changelings lived they died.'

This said, th' impatient statesmonger  
Could now contain himself no longer,  
Who had not spared to show his piques  
Against th' haranguer's politics,  
With smart remarks of leering faces,  
And annotations of grimaces.

After he had administered a dose  
Of snuff mundungus to his nose,  
And powdered th' inside of his skull,  
Instead of th' outward jobbernot,  
He shook it with a scornful look  
On th' adversary, and thus he spoke :

' In dressing a calf's head, although  
The tongue and brains together go,  
Both keep so great a distance here,  
'Tis strange if ever they come near ;  
For who did ever play his gambols  
With such insufferable rambles,  
To make the bringing in the king,  
And keeping of him out, one thing ?  
Which none could do, but those that swore  
T' as point-blank nonsense heretofore ;  
That to defend was to invade,

And to assassinate to aid :  
Unless, because you drove him out,—  
And that was never made a doubt,—  
No power is able to restore  
And bring him in, but on your score ;  
A spiritual doctrine, that conduces  
Most properly to all your uses.  
'Tis true, a scorpion's oil is said  
To cure the wounds the vermin made ;  
And weapons dressed with salves, restore  
And heal the hurts they gave before :

But whether Presbyterians have  
So much good nature as the salve,

Or virtue in them as the vermin,  
Those who have tried them can determine.  
Indeed 'tis pity you should miss  
Th' arrears of all your services,  
And for th' eternal obligation  
Y' laid upon th' ungrateful nation,  
B' used so unconscionably hard,  
As not to find a just reward,  
For letting rapine loose, and murther,  
To rage just so far, but no further :  
And setting all the land on fire,  
'To burn t' a scantling, but no higher ;  
For venturing to assassinate,  
And cut the throats of church and state,  
And not be allowed the fittest men  
To take the charge of both again :  
Especially that have the grace  
Of self-denying gifted face ;  
Who, when your projects have miscarried,  
Can lay them, with undaunted forehead,  
On those you painfully trepanned,  
And sprinkled in at second hand ;  
As we have been, to share the guilt  
Of Christian blood, devoutly spilt ;  
For so our ignorance was flammed  
'To damn ourselves, t' avoid being damned ;  
Till finding your old foe, the hangman,  
Was like to lurch you at backgammon,  
And win your necks upon the set,  
As well as ours, who did but bet ;  
For he had drawn your ears before,  
And nicked them on the self-same score  
We threw the box and dice away,  
Before y' had lost us at foul play ;  
And brought you down to rook and lie,  
And fancy only on the by ;  
Redeemed your forfeit jobbernoles,  
From perching upon lofty poles,  
And rescued all your outward traitors,  
From hanging up, like alligators ;  
For which ingeniously y' have showed  
Your presbyterian gratitude ;



Would freely have paid us home in kind,  
And not have been one rope behind.  
Those were your motives to divide,  
And scruple, on the other side,  
To turn your zealous frauds, and force,  
To fits of conscience and remorse ;  
To be convinced they were in vain,  
And face about for new again ;  
For truth no more unveiled your eyes,  
Than maggots are convinced to flies ;  
And therefore all your lights and calls  
Are but apocryphal and false,  
To charge us with the consequences  
Of all your native insolences,  
That to your own imperious wills  
Laid law and gospel neck and heels ;  
Corrupted the Old Testament,  
To serve the New for precedent ;  
To amend its errors and defects,  
With murder and rebellion-texts ;  
Of which there is not any one  
In all the book to sow upon ;  
And therefore from your tribe, the Jews  
Held Christian doctrine forth, and use ;  
As Mahomet your chief, began  
To mix them in the Alcoran ;  
Denounced and prayed with fierce devotion,  
And bended elbows on the cushion :  
Stole from the beggars all your tones,  
And gifted mortifying groans ;  
Had lights where better eyes were blind,  
As pigs are said to see the wind ;  
Filled Bedlam with predestination,  
And Knightsbridge with illumination.  
Made children, with your tones, to run for't  
As bad as Bloodybones or Lunsford.  
While women, great with child, miscarried,  
For being to malignants married :  
Transformed all wives to Dalilahs,  
Whose husbands were not for the cause ;  
And turned the men to ten-horned cattle,  
Because they came not out to battle ;

Made tailors' 'prentices turn heroes,  
For fear of being transformed to Meroz,  
And rather forfeit their indentures,  
Than not espouse the saints' adventures :  
Could transubstantiate, metamorphose,  
And charm whole herds of beasts, like Orpheus ;  
Enchant the king's and church's lands,  
T' obey and follow your commands,  
And settle on a new freehold,  
As Marcly Hill had done of old ;  
Could turn the cov'nant, and translate  
The gospel into spoons and plate ;  
Expound upon all merchants' cashes,  
And open th' intricatest places ;  
Could catechize a money-box,  
And prove all pouches orthodox ;  
Until the cause became a Damon,  
And Pythias the wicked Mammon.

' And yet, in spite of all your charms  
To conjure Legion up in arms,  
And raise more devils in the rout,  
Than e'er y' were able to cast out,  
Y' have been reduced, and by those fools,  
Bred up, you say, in your own schools,  
Who, though but gifted at your feet,  
Have made it plain they have more wit,  
By whom you've been so oft trepanned,  
And held forth out of all command ;  
Out-gifted, out-impulsed, out-done,  
And out-revealed at carryings-on ;  
Of all your dispensations wormed,  
Out-providenced and out-reformed ;  
Ejected out of church and state,  
And all things but the people's hate ;  
And spirited out of th' enjoyments  
Of precious, edifying employments,  
By those who lodged their gifts and graces,  
Like better bowlers, in your places :  
All which you bore with resolution,  
Charged on th' account of persecution ;  
And though most righteously oppressed,  
Against your wills, still acquiesced :

And never hummed and hahed sedition,  
Nor snuffled treason, nor misprision :  
That is, because you never durst ;  
For, had you preached and prayed your worst,  
Alas ! you were no longer able  
To raise your posse of the rabble :  
One single redcoat sentinel  
Out-charmed the magic of the spell,  
And, with his squirt-fire, could disperse  
Whole troops with chapter raised and verse.  
We knew too well those tricks of yours,  
To leave it ever in your powers,  
Or trust our safeties, or undoings,  
To your disposing of outgoings,  
Or to your ordering providence,  
One farthing's worth of consequence.

‘ For had you power to undermine,  
Or wit to carry a design,  
Or correspondence to trepan,  
Inveigle, or betray one man,  
There's nothing else that interyenes,  
And bars your zeal to use the means ;  
And therefore wondrous like, no doubt,  
To bring in kings, or keep them out :  
Brave undertakers to restore,  
That could not keep yourselves in power ;  
T' advance the interests of the crown,  
That wanted wit to keep your own.  
’Tis true you have, for I'd be loth  
To wrong ye, done your parts in both,  
To keep him out, and bring him in,  
As grace is introduced by sin ;  
For 'twas your zealous want of sense,  
And sanctified impertinence,  
Your carrying business in a huddle,  
That forced our rulers to new-model ;  
Obliged the state to tack about,  
And turn you, root and branch, all out ;  
To reformado, one and all,  
T' your great croisado general :  
Your greedy slaving to devour,  
Before 'twas in your clutches, power ;

That sprung the game you were to set,  
Before y' had time to draw the net ;  
Your spite to see the church's lands  
Divided into other hands,  
And all your sacrilegious ventures  
Laid out in tickets and debentures :  
Your envy to be sprinkled down,  
By under churches in the town ;  
And no course used to stop their mouths,  
Nor th' independents' spreading growths :  
All which considered, 'tis most true  
None bring him in so much as you,  
Who have prevailed beyond their plots,  
'Their midnight juntos, and sealed knots ;  
'That thrive more by your zealous piques,  
'Than all their own rash politics.  
And this way you may claim a share  
In carrying, as you brag, th' affair,  
Else frogs and toads, that croaked the Jews  
From Pharaoh and his brick-kilns loose,  
And flies and mange, that set them free  
From task-masters and slavery,  
Were likelier to do the feat,  
In any indifferent man's conceit :  
For who e'er heard of restoration,  
Until your thorough reformation ?  
'That is, the king's and church's lands  
Were sequestered int' other hands :  
For only then, and not before,  
Your eyes were opened to restore ;  
And when the work was carrying on,  
Who crossed it, but yourselves alone ?  
As by a world of hints appears,  
All plain, and extant, as your ears.  
' But first, o' th' first : 'The Isle of Wight  
Will rise up, if you should deny't,  
Where Henderson, and th' other masses,  
Were sent to cap texts, and put cases :  
'To pass for deep and learnèd scholars,  
Although put paltry Ob and Sollers :  
As if th' unseasonable fools  
Had been a coursing in the schools,

Until th' had proved the devil author  
O' th' cov'nant, and the cause his daughter ;  
For when they charged him with the guilt  
Of all the blood that had been spilt,  
They did not mean he wrought th' effusion  
In person, like Sir Pride, or Hewson,  
But only those who first begun  
The quarrel were by him set on ;  
And who could those be but the saints,  
Those reformation termagants ?  
But ere this passed, the wise debate  
Spent so much time it grew too late ;  
For Oliver had gotten ground,  
T' inclose him with his warriors round ;  
Had brought his providence about,  
And turned th' untimely sophists out.

‘ Nor had the Uxbridge business less  
Of nonsense in't, or sottishness ;  
When from a scoundrel holder-forth,  
The scum, as well as son o' th' earth,  
Your mighty senators took law,  
At his command were forced t' withdraw,  
And sacrifice the peace o' th' nation  
The doctrine, use, and application.  
So when the Scots, your constant cronies,  
Th' espousers of your cause and monies,  
Who had so often, in your aid,  
So many ways been soundly paid,  
Came in at last for better ends,  
To prove themselves your trusty friends,  
You basely left them, and the church  
They trained you up to, in the lurch,  
And suffered your own tribe of Christians  
To fall before, as true Philistines.  
This shows what utensils y' have been,  
To bring the king's concerns in,  
Which is so far from being true,  
That none but he can bring in you ;  
And if he take you into trust,  
Will find you most exactly just,  
Such as will punctually repay  
With double interest, and betray.

‘ Not that I think those pantomimes,  
Who vary action with the times,  
Are less ingenious in their art,  
Than those who dully act one part ;  
Or those who turn from side to side,  
More guilty than the wind and tide.  
All countries are a wise man’s home  
And so are governments to some,  
Who change them for the same intrigues  
That statesmen use in breaking leagues ;  
While others in old faiths and troths  
Look odd, as out-of-fashioned clothes,  
And nastier in an old opinion,  
Than those who never shift their linen.  
For true and faithful’s sure to lose,  
Which way soever the game goes ;  
And whether parties lose or win,  
Is always nicked, or else hedged in :  
While power usurped, like stolen delight,  
Is more bewitching than the right,  
And when the times begin to alter,  
None rise so high as from the halter.  
And so we may, if we’ve but sense  
To use the necessary means,  
And not your usual stratagems  
On one another, lights, and dreams :  
To stand on terms as positive,  
As if we did not take, but give ;  
Set up the covenant on crutches,  
’Gainst those who have us in their clutches,  
And dream of pulling churches down,  
Before we’re sure to prop our own ;  
Your constant method of proceeding,  
Without the carnal means of heeding,  
Who, ’twixt your inward sense and outward,  
Are worse, than if y’ had none, accounted.

‘ I grant all courses are in vain,  
Unless we can get in again ;  
The only way that’s left us now,  
But all the difficulty’s, how ?  
’Tis true we’ve money, th’ only power  
That all mankind falls down before ;

Money that, like the swords of kings,  
Is the last reason of all things ;  
And therefore need not doubt our play  
Has all advantages that way ;  
As long as men have faith to sell,  
And meet with those that can pay well ;  
Whose half-starved pride, and avarice,  
One church and state will not suffice  
T' expose to sale ; besides the wages  
Of storing plagues to after ages.  
Nor is our money less our own  
Than 'twas before we laid it down ;  
For 'twill return, and turn t' account,  
If we are brought in play upon't,  
Or but, by casting knaves, get in,  
What power can hinder us to win ?  
We know the arts we used before,  
In peace and war, and something more ;  
And by th' unfortunate events,  
Can mend our next experiments ;  
For when we're taken into trust ;  
How easy are the wisest choused,  
Who see but th' outsides of our' seats,  
And not their secret springs and weights ;  
And, while they're busy, at their ease,  
Can carry what designs we please ?  
How easy is't to serve for agents,  
To prosecute our old engagements ?  
To keep the good old cause on foot,  
And present power from taking root ;  
Inflame them both with false alarms  
Of plots, and parties taking arms ;  
To keep the nation's wounds too wide ;  
From healing up of side to side ;  
Profess the passionat'st concerns,  
For both their interests by turns,  
The only way t' improve our own,  
By dealing faithfully with none ;  
As bowls run true, by being made  
On purpose false, and to be swayed,  
For if we should be true to either,  
'Twould turn us out of both together ;

And therefore have no other means  
To stand upon our own defence,  
But keeping up our ancient party  
In vigour, confident and hearty :  
To reconcile our late dissenters,  
Our brethren, though by other venters ;  
Unite them, and their different maggots,  
As long and short sticks are in faggots,  
And make them join again as close,  
As when they first began t' espouse ;  
Erect them into separate  
New Jewish tribes in church and state ;  
To join in marriage and commerce,  
And only 'mong themselves converse,  
And all that are not of their mind,  
Make enemies to all mankind :  
Take all religions in, and stickle  
From conclave down to conventicle ;  
Agreeing still or disagreeing,  
According to the light in being,  
Sometimes for liberty of conscience,  
And spiritual misrule in one sense ;  
But in another quite contrary,  
As dispensations chance to vary ;  
And stand for, as the times will bear it,  
All contradictions of the spirit :  
Protect their emissaries, empowered  
To preach sedition and the word ;  
And when they're hampered by the laws,  
Release the labourers for the cause,  
And turn the persecution back  
On those that made the first attack,  
To keep them equally in awe,  
For breaking, or maintaining law :  
And when they have their fits too soon,  
Before the full-tides of the moon,  
Put off their zeal t' a fitter season,  
For sowing faction in and treason ;  
And keep them hooded, and their churches,  
Like hawks, from baiting on their perches ;  
That when the blessèd time shall come  
Of quitting Babylon and Rome,



They may be ready to restore  
Their own fifth monarchy once more.  
Meanwhile be better armed to fence  
Against revolts of providence,  
By watching narrowly, and snapping  
All blind sides of it, as they happen :  
For if success could make us saints,  
Our ruin turned us miscreants ;  
A scandal that would fall too hard  
Upon a few, and unprepared.

‘ These are the courses we must run,  
Spite of our hearts, or be undone,  
And not to stand on terms and freaks,  
Before we have secured our necks,  
But do our work as out of sight,  
As stars by day, and suns by night ;  
All license of the people own,  
In opposition to the crown ;  
And for the crown as fiercely side,  
The head and body to divide ;  
The end of all we first designed,  
And all that yet remains behind.  
Be sure to spare no public rapine,  
On all emergencies that happen :  
For ’tis as easy to supplant  
Authority, as men in want ;  
As some of us, in trusts, have made  
The one hand with the other trade ;  
Gained vastly by their joint endeavour,  
The right a thief, the left receiver ;  
And what the one, by tricks, forestalled,  
The other, by as sly, retailed :  
For gain has wonderful effects  
T’ improve the factory of sects ;  
The rule of faith in all professions,  
And great Diana of th’ Ephesians ;  
Whence turning of religion ’s made  
The means to turn and wind a trade ;  
And though some change it for the worse,  
They put themselves into a course,  
And draw in store of customers,  
To thrive the better in commèrce :

For all religions flock together,  
Like tame and wild fowl of a feather,  
To nab the itches of their sects,  
As jades do one another's necks.  
Hence 'tis hypocrisy as well  
Will serve t' improve a church, as zeal ;  
As persecution, or promotion,  
Do equally advance devotion.

‘ Let business like ill watches, go  
Sometime too fast, sometime too slow ;  
For things in order are put out  
So easy, ease itself will do't :  
But when the feat's designed and meant,  
What miracle can bar th' event ?  
For 'tis more easy to betray,  
Than ruin any other way.

‘ All possible occasions start,  
The weightiest matters to divert ;  
Obstruct, perplex, distract, entangle,  
And lay perpetual trains, to wrangle.  
But in affairs of less import,  
That neither do us good nor hurt,  
And they receive as little by,  
Out-fawn as much, and out-comply,  
And seem as scrupulously just,  
‘ To bait our hooks for greater trust.  
But still be careful to cry down  
All public actions, though our own ;  
The least miscarriage aggravate,  
And charge it all upon the state :  
Express the horrid'st detestation,  
And pity the distracted nation ;  
Tell stories scandalous and false,  
I' th' proper language of cabals,  
Where all a subtle statesman says,  
Is half in words, and half in face ;  
As Spaniards talk in dialogues  
Of heads and shoulders, nods and shrugs ;  
Entrust it under solemn vow  
Of mum and silence, and the rose,  
To be retailed again in whispers,  
For th' easy credulous to disperse.’

Thus far the statesman—When a shout,  
Heard at a distance, put him out ;  
And straight another, all aghast,  
Rushed in with equal fear and haste,  
Who stared about, as pale as death,  
And for a while, as out of breath,  
Till, having gathered up his wits,  
He thus began his tale by fits :

‘That beastly rabble—that came down’  
From all the garrets—in the town  
And stalls, and shop-boards—in vast swarms,  
With new-chalked bills, and rusty arms,  
To cry the cause—up, heretofore,  
And bawl the bishops—out of door ;  
Are new drawn up—in greater shoals,  
To roast—and broil us on the coals,  
And all the grandees—of our members  
Are carbonading—on the embers ;  
Knights, citizens and burgesses—  
Held forth by rumps—of pigs and geese,  
That serve for characters—and badges  
To represent their personages.  
Each bonfire is a funeral pile,  
In which they roast, and scorch, and broil,  
And every representative  
I have vowed to roast—and broil alive :  
And ’tis a miracle we are not  
Already sacrificed incarnate ;  
For while we wrangle here, and jar,  
We’re grilliced all at Temple Bar ;  
Some, on the sign-post of an alehouse,  
Hang in effigy, on the gallows,  
Made up of rags, to personate  
Respective officers of state ;  
That, henceforth, they may stand reputed,  
Proscribed in law, and executed,  
And, while the work is carrying on,  
Be ready listed under Dun,  
That worthy patriot, once the bellows,  
And tinder-box, of all his fellows ;  
The activ’st member of the five,  
As well as the most primitive ;

Who, for his faithful service then,  
Is chosen for a fifth again :  
For since the State has made a quint  
Of generals, he's lifted in't.  
This worthy, as the world will say,  
Is paid in specie, his own way ;  
For, moulded to the life, in clouts,  
Th' have picked from dunghills hereabouts,  
He's mounted on a hazel bavin  
A cropped malignant baker gave 'em ;  
And to the largest bonfire riding,  
Th' have roasted Cook already, and Pride in ;  
On whom, in equipage and state,  
His scarecrow fellow-members wait,  
And march in order, two and two,  
As at thanksgivings th' used to do ;  
Each in a tattered talisman,  
Like vermin in effigy slain.

‘ But, what's more dreadful than the rest ;  
'Those rumps are but the tail o' th' beast,  
Set up to popish engineers,  
As by the crackers plainly appears ;  
For none but Jesuits have a mission  
To preach the faith with ammunition,  
And propagate the church with powder ;  
Their founder was a blown-up soldier.  
These spiritual pioneers o' th' whore's,  
That have the charge of all her stores ;  
Since first they failed in their designs,  
To take in heaven by springing mines,  
And, with unanswerable barrels  
Of gunpowder, dispute their quarrels,  
Now take a course more practicable,  
By laying trains to fire the rabble,  
And blow us up, in th' open streets,  
Disguised in rumps, like sambenites,  
More like to ruin and confound,  
Than all their doctrines under ground.

‘ Nor have they chosen rumps amiss,  
For symbols of state-mysteries ;  
Though some suppose, 'twas but to show  
How much they scorned the saints, the few,

Who, 'cause they're wasted to the stumps,  
 Are represented best by rumps.  
 But Jesuits have deeper reaches  
 In all their politic far-fetches ;  
 And from the Coptic priest, Kircherus,  
 Found out this mystic way to jeer us :  
 For, as th' Egyptians used by bees  
 T' express their antique Ptolomies,  
 And by their stings, the swords they wore,  
 Held forth authority and power ;  
 Because these subtle animals  
 Bear all their interests in their tails ;  
 But when they're once impaired in that,  
 Are banished their well-ordered state :  
 'They thought all governments were best  
 By hieroglyphic rumps expressed.  
 For as a fly that goes to bed,  
 Rests with his tail above his head,  
 So, in this mongrel state of ours,  
 The rabble are the supreme powers,  
 That horsed us on their backs, to show us  
 A jadish trick at last, and throw us.  
 'The learnèd rabbins of the Jews  
 Write, there's a bone, which they call Luez,  
 I' th' rump of man, of such a virtue,  
 No force in nature can do hurt to ;  
 And therefore, at the last great day,  
 All th' other members shall, they say,  
 Spring out of this, as from a seed  
 All sorts of vegetals proceed ;  
 From whence the learnèd sons of art,  
*Os sacrum* justly style that part :  
 Then what can better represent,  
 Than this rump bone, the parliament ?  
 That after several rude ejections,  
 And as prodigious resurrections,  
 With new reversions of nine lives,  
 Starts up, and, like a cat, revives ?  
 But now, alas ! they're all expired,  
 And th' house, as well as members, fired ;  
 Consumed in kennels by the rout,  
 With which they other fires put out ;

Condemned t' ungoverning distress,  
And paltry private wretchedness ;  
Worse than the devil to privation,  
Beyond all hopes of restoration ;  
And parted, like the body and soul,  
From all dominion and control.  
We, who could lately, with a look,  
Enact, establish, or revoke,  
Whose arbitrary nods gave law,  
And frowns kept multitudes in awe ;  
Before the bluster of whose huff,  
All hats, as in a storm, flew off ;  
Adored and bowed to by the great,  
Down to the footman and valèt ;  
Had more bent knees than chapel-mats,  
And prayers than the crowns of hats,  
Shall now be scorned as wretchedly ;  
For ruin's just as low as high ;  
Which might be suffered were it all  
The horror that attends our fall :  
For some of us have scores more large  
'Than heads and quarters can discharge ;  
And others, who, by restless scraping,  
With public frauds, and private rapine,  
Have mighty heaps of wealth amassed,  
Would gladly lay down all at last ;  
And, to be but undone, entail  
Their vessels on perpetual jail,  
And bless the devil to let them farms  
Of forfeit souls on no worse terms.'

This said, a near and louder shout  
Put all th' assembly to the rout,  
Who now begun t' outrun their fear,  
As horses do, from those they bear ;  
But crowded on with so much haste,  
Until th' harl blocked the passage fast,  
And barricadoed it with haunches  
Of outward men, and bulks and paunches,  
That with their shoulders strove to squeeze,  
And rather save a crippled piece  
Of all their crushed and broken members,  
Than have them grillic'd on the embers ;

Still pressing on with heavy packs  
Of one another on their backs,  
The vanguard could no longer bear  
The charges of the forlorn rear,  
But, borne down headlong by the rout,  
Were trampled sorely under foot;  
Yet nothing proved so formidable,  
As th' horrid cookery of the rabble;  
And fear, that keeps all feeling out,  
As lesser pains are by the gout,  
Relieved 'em with a fresh supply  
Of rallied force, enough to fly,  
And beat a Tuscan running-horse,  
Whose jockey-rider is all spurs.

## CANTO III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The knight and squire's prodigious flight  
To quit th' enchanted bower by night.  
He plods to turn his amorous suit,  
T' a plea in law, and prosecute :  
Repairs to counsel, to advise  
'Bout managing the enterprise ;  
But first resolves to try by letter,  
And one more fair address, to get her.

Who would believe what strange bugbears  
Mankind creates itself, of fears,  
'That spring, like fern, that insect weed,  
Equivocally, without seed,  
And have no possible foundation,  
But merely in th' imagination ?  
And yet can do more dreadful feats  
Than hags, with all their imps and teats ;  
Make more bewitch and haunt themselves,  
Than all their nurseries of elves.  
For fear does things so like a witch,  
'Tis hard t' unriddle which is which ;  
Sets up communities of senses,  
To chop and change intelligences ;  
As Rosicrucian virtuosos  
Can see with ears, and hear with noses ;  
And when they neither see nor hear,  
Have more than both supplied by fear,  
That makes them in the dark see visions,  
And hag themselves with apparitions,  
And when their eyes discover least,  
Discern the subtlest objects best ;  
Do things not contrary alone,  
To th' course of nature, but its own,  
The courage of the bravest daunt,  
And turn poltroons as valiant ;



For men as resolute appear  
With too much, as too little fear ;  
And, when they're out of hopes of flying,  
Will run away from death, by dying ;  
Or turn again to stand it out,  
And those they fled, like lions, rout.

This Hudibras had proved too true,  
Who, by the furies, left *perdue*,  
And haunted with detachments, sent  
From Marshal Legion's regiment,  
Was by a fiend, as counterfeit,  
Relieved and rescued with a cheat,  
When nothing but himself, and fear,  
Was both the imps and conjurer ;  
As by the rules o' th' virtuosi,  
It follows in due form of poesie.

Disguised in all the masks of night,  
We left our champion on his flight,  
At blindman's buff, to grope his way,  
In equal fear of night and day ;  
Who took his dark and desperate course,  
He knew no better than his horse ;  
And by an unknown devil led, '  
He knew as little whither, fled,  
He never was in greater need,  
Nor less capacity of speed ;  
Disabled, both in man and beast,  
To fly and run away, his best ;  
'To keep the enemy, and fear,  
From equal falling on his rear.  
And though with kicks and bangs he plied  
The furthur and the nearer side ; ,  
As seamen ride with all their force,  
And tug as if they rowed the horse,  
And when the hackney sails more swift,  
Believe they lag, or run adrift ;  
So, though he posted e'er so fast,  
His fear was greater than his haste :  
For fear, though fleetet than the wind,  
Believes 'tis always left behind.  
But when the morn began t' appear,  
And shift t' another scene his fear,

He found his new officious shade,  
That came so timely to his aid,  
And forced him from the foe t' escape,  
Had turned itself to Ralpho's shape,  
So like in person, garb, and pitch,  
'Twas hard t' interpret which was which.

For Ralpho had no sooner told  
The lady all he had t' unfold,  
But she conveyed him out of sight,  
To entertain the approaching knight ;  
And while he gave himself diversion,  
T' accommodate his beast and person,  
And put his beard into a posture  
At best advantage to accost her,  
She ordered th' antimasquerade,  
For his reception, aforesaid :  
But when the ceremony was done,  
The lights put out, the furies gone,  
And Hudibras, among the rest,  
Conveyed away, as Ralpho guessed,  
The wretched caitiff, all alone,  
As he believ'd, began to moan,  
And tell his story to himself,  
The knight mistook him for an elf ;  
And did so still, till he began  
To scruple at Ralph's outward man,  
And thought, because they oft agreed  
T' appear in one another's stead,  
And act the saint's and devil's part,  
With undistinguishable art,  
They might have done so now, perhaps,  
And put on one another's shapes ;  
And therefore, to resolve the doubt,  
He stared upon him, and cried out,  
'What art? My squire, or that bold sprite  
That took his place and shape to-night?  
Some busy independent pug,  
Retainer to his synagogue?'  
'Alas!' quoth he, 'I'm none of those  
Your bosom friends, as you suppose,  
But Ralph himself, your trusty squire,  
Wh' has dragged your dunship out o' th' mire,

And from th' enchantments of a widow,  
Wh' had turned you int' a beast, have freed you ;  
And, though a prisoner of war,  
Have brought you safe, where now you are ;  
Which you would gratefully repay,  
Your constant presbyterian way.'

'That's stranger,' quoth the knight, 'and stranger ;  
Who gave thee notice of my danger ?'

Quoth he, 'Th' infernal conjurer  
Pursued, and took me prisoner ;  
And, knowing you were hereabout,  
Brought me along to find you out,  
Where I, in hugger-mugger hid,  
Have noted all they said or did :  
And, though they lay to him the pageant,  
I did not see him, nor his agent ;  
Who played their sorceries out of sight,  
T' avoid a fiercer second fight.'

'But didst thou see no devils then ?'

'Not one,' quoth he, 'but carnal men,  
A little worse than fiends in hell,  
And that she-devil Jezebel,  
That laughed and tee-heed with derision,  
To see them take your deposition.'

'What then,' quoth Hudibras, 'was he  
That played the devil to examine me ?'

'A rallying weaver in the town,  
That did it in a parson's gown,  
Whom all the parish takes for gifted,  
But, for my part, I ne'er believed it :  
In which you told them all your feats,  
Your conscientious frauds and cheats ;  
Denied your whipping, and confessed ;  
The naked truth of all the rest,  
More plainly than the reverend writer  
That to our churches veiled his mitre ;  
All which they take in black and white,  
And cudgelled me to underwrite.'

'What made thee, when they all were gone,  
And none but thou and I alone,  
To act the devil, and forbear  
To rid me of my hellish fear ?'

Quoth he, 'I knew your constant rate,  
And frame of spirit too obstinate,  
To be by me prevailed upon,  
With any motives of my own ;  
And therefore strove to counterfeit  
The devil a while, to nick your wit ;  
The devil, that is your constant crony,  
That only can prevail upon ye ;  
Else we might still have been disputing,  
And they with weighty drubs confuting.'

The knight, who now began to find  
They'd left the enemy behind,  
And saw no further harm remain,  
But feeble weariness and pain,  
Perceived, by losing of their way,  
Th' had gained th' advantage of the day,  
And, by declining of the road,  
They had, by chance, their rear made good ;  
He ventured to dismiss his fear,  
That parting's wont to rant and tear,  
And give the desperat'st attack  
To danger still behind its back :  
For having paused to recollect,  
And on his past success reflect,  
T' examine and consider why,  
And whence, and how, he came to fly,  
And when no devil had appeared,  
What else it could be said he feared,  
It put him in so fierce a rage,  
He once resolved to re-engage ;  
Tossed, like a foot-ball, back again  
With shame, and vengeance, and disdain.

Quoth he, 'It was thy cowardice,  
That made me from this leaguer rise,  
And when I'd half-reduced the place,  
To quit it infamously base,  
Was better covered by the new  
Arrived detachment, than I knew ;  
To slight my new acquests, and run,  
Victoriously, from battles won ;  
And, reckoning all I gained or lost,  
To sell them cheaper than they cost ;

To make me put myself to flight,  
And, conquering, run away by night ;  
To drag me out, which th' haughty foe  
Durst never have presumed to do ;  
To mount me in the dark, by force,  
Upon the bare ridge of my horse,  
Exposed in querpo to their rage,  
Without my arms and equipage ;  
Lest, if they ventured to pursue,  
I might the unequal fight renew ;  
And, to preserve thy outward man,  
Assumed my place, and led the van.'

'All this,' quoth Ralph, 'I did, 'tis true,  
Not to preserve myself, but you :  
You, who were damned to baser drubs  
Than wretches feel in powdering tubs,  
'To mount two-wheeled carroches, worse  
Than managing a wooden horse ;  
Dragged out through straiter holes by th' ears,  
Erased, or coupéd for perjurers ;  
Who, though th' attempt had proved in vain,  
Had had no reason to complain ;  
But, since it prospered, 'tis unhandsome  
To blame the hand that paid your ransom,  
And rescued your obnoxious bones  
From unavoidable battoons.  
The enemy was reinforced,  
And we disabled and unhorsed,  
Disarmed, unqualified for fight,  
And no way left but hasty flight,  
Which, though as desperate in th' attempt,  
Has given you freedom to condemn't.  
But were our bones in fit condition  
To reinforce the expedition  
'Tis now unseasonable and vain,  
To think of falling on again :  
No martial project to surprise  
Can ever be attempted twice ;  
Nor cast design serve afterwards, '  
As gamesters tear their losing cards.  
Beside, our bangs of man and beast  
Are fit for nothing now but rest,

And for a while will not be able  
To rally, and prove serviceable :  
And therefore I, with reason, chose  
This stratagem to amuse our foes,  
To make an honourable retreat,  
And waive a total sure defeat :  
For those that fly may fight again,  
Which he can never do that's slain.  
Hence timely running's no mean part  
Of conduct, in the martial art,  
By which some glorious feats achieve,  
As citizens by breaking thrive,  
And cannons conquer armies, while  
'They seem to draw off and recoil ;  
Is held the gallant'st course, and bravest,  
'To great exploits, as well as safest ;  
'That spares th' expense of time and pains,  
And dangerous beating out of brains ;  
And, in the end, prevails as certain  
As those that never trust to fortune ;  
But make their fear do execution  
Beyond the stoutest resolution ;  
As earthquakes kill without a blow,  
And, only trembling, overthrow.  
If th' ancients crowned their bravest men  
'That only saved a citizen,  
What victory could e'er be won,  
If every one would save but one ?  
Or fight endangered to be lost,  
Where all resolve to save the most ?  
By this means, when a battle's won,  
The war's as far from being done ;  
For those that save themselves and fly,  
Go halves, at least, i' th' victory ;  
And sometime, when the loss is small,  
And danger great, they challenge all ;  
Print new additions to their feats,  
And emendations in gazettes ;  
And when, for furious haste to run,  
'They durst not stay to fire a gun,  
Have done 't with bonfires, and at home  
Made squibs and crackers overcome ;

To set the rabble on a flame,  
 And keep their governors from blame,  
 Disperse the news the pulpit tells,  
 Confirmed with fireworks and with bells ;  
 And, though reduced to that extreme,  
 They have been forced to sing *Te Deum* ;  
 Yet, with religious blasphemy,  
 By flattering heaven with a lie,  
 And, for their beating, giving thanks,  
 Th' have raised recruits, and filled their banks ;  
 For those who run from th' enemy,  
 Engage them equally to fly ;  
 And when the fight becomes a chace,  
 Those win the day that win the race ;  
 And that which would not pass in fights,  
 Has done the feat with easy flights ;  
 Recovered many a desperate campaign  
 With Bourdeaux, Burgundy, and Champaign ;  
 Restored the fainting high and mighty,  
 With brandy-wine, and aqua-vitæ ;  
 And made them stoutly overcome  
 With bacrack, hoccamore, and mum ;  
 With th' uncontrolled decrees of fate  
 To victory necessitate ;  
 With which, although they run or burn.  
 They unavoidably return ;  
 Or else their sultan populaces  
 Still strangle all their routed bassas.'

Quoth Hudibras, ' I understand  
 What fights thou mean'st at sea and land,  
 And who those were that run away,  
 And yet gave out th' had won the day ;  
 Although the rabble soursed them fo'rt,  
 O'er head and ears, in mud and dirt.  
 'Tis true our modern way of war  
 Is grown more politic by far,  
 But not so resolute and bold,  
 Nor tied to honour, as the old.  
 For now they laugh at giving battle,  
 Unless it be to herds of cattle ;  
 Or fighting convoys of provision,  
 The whole design o' the expedition,

And not with downright blows to rout  
The enemy, but eat them out :  
As fighting, in all beasts of prey,  
And eating, are performed one way,  
To give defiance to their teeth,  
And fight their stubborn hearts to death ;  
And those achieve the highest renown,  
That bring the other stomachs down.  
There's now no fear of wounds nor maiming,  
All dangers are reduced to famine,  
And feats of arms to plot, design,  
Surprise, and stratagem, and mine ;  
But have no need nor use of courage,  
Unless it be for glory, or forage :  
For if they fight 'tis but by chance,  
When one side venturing to advance,  
And come uncivilly too near,  
Are charged unmercifully i' th' rear,  
And forced, with terrible resistance,  
To keep hereafter at a distance,  
To pick out ground t' encamp upon,  
Where store of largest rivers run,  
That serve, instead of peaceful barriers,  
To part th' engagements of their warriors ;  
Where both from side to side may skip,  
And only encounter at bo-peep :  
For men are found the stouter-hearted,  
The certainer they're to be parted,  
And therefore post themselves in bogs,  
As th' ancient mice attacked the frogs,  
And made their mortal enemy,  
The water-rat, their strict ally.  
For 'tis not now who's stout and bold,  
But who bears hunger best, and cold ?  
And he's approved the most deserving,  
Who longest can hold out at starving ;  
And he that routs most pigs and cows,  
The formidablest man of prowess.  
So th' emperor Caligula,  
That triumphed o'er the British sea,  
Took crabs and oysters prisoners,  
And lobsters, 'stead of cuirassiers ;



Engaged his legions in fierce bustles,  
With periwinkles, prawns, and mussels,  
And led his troops with furious gallops,  
To charge whole regiments of scallops ;  
Not like their ancient way of war,  
To wait on his triumphal car ;  
But when he went to dine or sup,  
More bravely ate his captives up,  
And left all war, by his example,  
Reduced to vict'ling of a camp well.'

Quoth Ralph, ' By all that you have said,  
And twice as much that I could add,  
'Tis plain you cannot now do worse  
Than take this out-of-fashioned course,  
To hope, by stratagem, to woo her,  
Or waging battle to subdue her ;  
Though some have done it in romances,  
And banged them into amorous fancies :  
As those who won the Amazons,  
By wanton drubbing of their bones ;  
And stout Rinaldo gained his bride  
By courting of her back and side.  
But since these times and feats are over,  
'They are not for a modern lover,  
When mistresses are too cross-grained,  
By such addresses to be gained ;  
And if they were, would have it out  
With many another kind of bout.  
Therefore I hold no course s' infeasible,  
As this of force, to win the Jezebel,  
To storm her heart by th' antique charms  
Of ladies errant, force of arms :  
But rather strive by law to win her,  
And try the title you have in her.  
Your case is clear, you have her word,  
And me to witness the accord :  
Besides two more of her retinue  
To testify what passed between you ;  
More probable, and like to hold,  
Than hand, or seal, or breaking gold,  
For which so many that renounced  
Their plighted contracts, have been trounced,

And bills upon recòrd been found,  
That forced the ladies to compound ;  
And that, unless I miss the matter,  
Is all the business you look after.  
Besides, encounters at the bar  
Are braver now than those in war,  
In which the law does execution,  
With less disorder and confusion ;  
Has more of honour in't, some hold,  
Not like the new way, but the old,  
When those the pen had drawn together,  
Decided quarrels with the feather,  
And wingèd arrows killed as dead,  
And more than bullets now of lead :  
So all their combats now, as then,  
Are managed chiefly by the pen ;  
'That does the feat, with braver vigours,  
In words at length, as well as figures ;  
Is judge of all the world performs  
In voluntary feats of arms,  
And whatsoe'er's achieved in fight,  
Determines which is wrong or right :  
For whether you prevail, or lose,  
All must be tried there in the close ;  
And therefore 'tis not wise to shun  
What you must trust to ere ye've done.  
The law, that settles all you do,  
And marries where you did but woo ;  
That makes the most perfidious lover,  
A lady, that's as false, recover ;  
And if it judge upon your side,  
Will soon extend her for your bride.  
And put her person, goods, or lands,  
Or which you like best, int' your hands.  
For law's the wisdom of all ages,  
And managed by the ablest sages,  
Who, though their business at the bar  
Be but a kind of civil war,  
In which th' engage with fiercer dudgeons  
Than e'er the Grecians did, and Trojans,  
They never manage the contest  
T' impair their public interest,

Or by their controversies lessen  
The dignity of their profession :  
Not like us brethren, who divide  
Our common-wealth, the cause, and side ;  
And though we're all as near of kindred  
As th' outward man is to the inward,  
We agree in nothing, but to wrangle  
About the slightest fingle-fangle,  
While lawyers have more sober sense,  
Than t' argue at their own expense,  
But make their best advantages  
Of others' quarrels, like the Swiss ;  
And out of foreign controversies,  
By aiding both sides, fill their purses ;  
But have no interest in the cause  
For which th' engage, and wage the laws,  
Nor further prospect than their pay,  
Whether they lose or win the day.  
And though th' abounded in all ages,  
With sundry learnèd clerks and sages ;  
Though all their business be dispute,  
Which way they canvass every suit,  
Th' have no disputes about their art,  
Nor in polemics controvert ;  
While all professions else are found  
With nothing but disputes t' abound :  
Divines of all sorts, and physicians,  
Philosophers, mathematicians ;  
The Galenist, and Paracelsian,  
Condemn the way each other deals in ;  
Anatomists dissect and mangle,  
To cut themselves out work to wrangle ;  
Astrologers dispute their dreams,  
That in their sleeps they talk of schemes ;  
And heralds stickle who got who,  
So many hundred years ago.  
But lawyers are too wise a nation  
T' expose their trade to disputation,  
Or make the busy rabble judges  
Of all their secret piques and grudges ;  
In which, whoever wins the day,  
The whole profession's sure to pay.

Beside, no mountebanks, nor cheats,  
Dare undertake to do their feats,  
When in all other sciences  
They swarm like insects, and increase.  
For what bigòt durst ever draw,  
By inward light, a deed in law?  
Or could hold forth, by revelation,  
An answer to a declaration?  
For those that meddle with their tools,  
Will cut their fingers, if they're fools:  
And if you follow their advice,  
In bills, and answers, and replies,  
They'll write a love-letter in chancery,  
Shall bring her upon oath to answer ye,  
And soon reduce her to b' your wife,  
Or make her weary of her life.'

The knight, who used with tricks and shifts  
To edify by Ralpho's gifts,  
But in appearance cried him down,  
'To make them better seem his own,  
All plagiaries' constant course  
Of sinking, when they take a purse,  
Resolved to follow his advice,  
But kept it from him by disguise;  
And, after stubborn contradiction,  
To counterfeit his own conviction,  
And, by transition, fall upon  
The resolution as his own.

Quoth he, 'This gambol thou advisest  
Is, of all others, the unwisest;  
For, if I think by law to gain her,  
There's nothing sillier nor vainer.  
'Tis but to hazard my pretence,  
Where nothing's certain but th' expense;  
To act against myself, and traverse  
My suit and title to her favours;  
And if she should, which heaven forbid!  
O'erthrow me, as the fiddler did,  
What after-course have I to take,  
'Gainst losing all I have at stake?  
He that with injury is grieved,  
And goes to law to be relieved,

Is sillier than a sottish chouse,  
Who, when a thief has robbed his house,  
Applies himself to cunning men,  
To help him to his goods again ;  
When all he can expect to gain,  
Is but to squander more in vain :  
And yet I have no other way,  
But is as difficult to play :  
For to reduce her, by main force,  
Is now in vain ; by fair means, worse ;  
But worst of all to give her over,  
'Till she's as desperate to recover :  
For bad games are thrown up too soon,  
Until they're never to be won ;  
But since I have no other course,  
But is as bad t' attempt, or worse,  
He that complies against his will,  
Is of his own opinion still,  
Which he may adhere to, yet disown,  
For reasons to himself best known ;  
But 'tis not to b' avoided now,  
For Sidrophel resolves to sue ;  
Whom I must answer, or begin,  
Inevitably, first with him ;  
For I've received advertisement,  
By times enough, of his intent ;  
And knowing he that first complains  
'Th' advantage of the business gains ;  
For courts of justice understand  
'The plaintiff to be eldest hand ;  
Who what he pleases may aver,  
'The other nothing till he swear ;"  
Is freely admitted to all grace,  
And lawful favour, by his place ;  
And, for his bringing custom in,  
Has all advantages to win :  
I, who resolve to oversee  
No lucky opportunity,  
Will go to counsel, to advise  
Which way t' encounter or surprise,  
And, after long consideration,  
Have found out one to fit th' occasion,

Most apt for what I have to do,  
As counsellor, and justice too.'

And truly so, no doubt, he was,  
A lawyer fit for such a case,  
An old dull sot, who told the clock,  
For many years, at Bridewell Dock,  
At Westminster, and Hicks's Hall,  
And *hiccius doctius* played in all ;  
Where, in all governments and times,  
H' had been both friend and foe to crimes,  
And used two equal ways of gaining,  
By hindering justice, or maintaining :  
To many a quean gave privilege,  
And whipped, for want of quarterage ;  
( Cart-loads of thieves to prison sent,  
For being behind a fortnight's rent ;  
And many a trusty pimp and crony  
To Puddle Dock, for want of money :  
Engaged the constable to seize  
All those that would not break the peace ;  
Nor give him back his own foul words,  
Though sometimes commoners, or lords,  
And kept 'em prisoners of course,  
For being sober at ill hours ;  
That in the morning he might free  
Or bind 'em over for his fee ;  
Made monsters fine, and puppet-plays,  
For leave to practise in their ways ;  
Farmed out all cheats, and went a share  
With th' headborough and scavenger ;  
And made the dirt i' th' street compound,  
For taking up the public ground ;  
The kennel, and the king's highway,  
For being unmolested, pay ;  
Let out the stocks and whipping-post,  
And cage, to those that gave him most ;  
Imposed a tax on bakers' ears,  
And for false weight on chandelers ;  
Made victuallers and vintners fine  
For arbitrary ale and wine ;  
But was a kind and constant friend  
To all that regularly offend

As residentiary bawds,  
And brokers that receive stol'n goods ;  
That cheat in lawful mysteries,  
And pay church duties, and his fees ;  
But was implacable and awkward,  
To all that interloped and hawkered.

To this brave man the knight repairs  
For counsel in his law-affairs,  
And found him mounted in his pew,  
With books and money placed, for show,  
Like nest-eggs to make clients lay,  
And for his false opinion pay :  
'To whom the knight, with comely grace,  
Put off his hat, to put his case ;  
Which he as proudly entertained,  
As th' other courteously strained ;  
And, to assure him 'twas not that  
He looked for, bid him put on 's hat.

Quoth he, ' There is one Sidrophel  
Whom I have cudgelled '—' Very well '—  
' And now he brags t' have beaten me '—  
' Better, and better still,' quoth he—  
' And vows to stick me to a wall,  
Where'er he meets me '—' Best of all '—  
' 'Tis true the knave has taken 's oath  
That I robbed him '—' Well done, in troth '—  
' When h' has confessed he stole my cloak,  
And picked my fob, and what he took ;  
Which was the cause that made me bang him,  
And take my goods again '—' Marry, hang him '—  
' Now, whether I should beforehand,  
Swear he robbed me ? '—' I understand '—  
' Or bring my action of conversion  
And trover for my goods ? '—' Ah, whoreson ! '—  
' Or, if 'tis better to endite,  
And bring him to his trial ? '—' Right '—  
' Prevent what he designs to do,  
And swear for th' state against him ? '—' True '—  
' Or whether he that is defendant,  
In this case, has the better end on't ;  
Who, putting in a new cross-bill,  
May traverse the action ? '—' Better still.'

‘Then there’s a lady too.’—‘Ay, marry’—  
‘That’s easily proved accessary;  
A widow, who by solemn vows,  
Contracted to me for my spouse,  
Combined with him to break her word,  
And has abetted all’—‘Good Lord!’—  
‘Suborned th’ aforesaid Sidrophel  
To tamper with the devil of hell,  
Who put m’ into a horrid fear,  
Fear of my life’—‘Make that appear’—  
‘Made an assault with fiends and men  
Upon my body’—‘Good again’—  
‘And kept me in a deadly fright,  
And false imprisonment, all night.  
Meanwhile they robbed me, and my horse,  
And stole my saddle’—‘Worse and worse.’  
‘And made me mount upon the bare ridge,  
T’ avoid a wretcheder miscarriage.’  
‘Sir,’ quoth the lawyer, ‘not to flatter ye,  
You have as good and fair a battery  
As heart can wish, and need not shame  
The proudest man alive to claim;  
For if th’ have used you as you say,  
Marry, quoth I, God give you joy;  
I would it were my case, I’d give  
More than I’ll say, or you’ll believe:  
I would so trounce her, and her purse,  
I’d made her kneel for better or worse;  
For matrimony, and hanging here,  
Both go by destiny so clear,  
That you as sure may pick and choose,  
As cross I win, and pile you lose:  
And if I durst, I would advance  
As much in ready maintenance,  
As upon any case I’ve known;  
But we that practice dare not own:  
The law severely contrabands  
Our taking business off men’s hands;  
’Tis common barratry, that bears  
Point-blank an action ’gainst our ears,  
And crops them till there is not leather,  
To stick a pen in left of either;



For which some do the summersault,  
And o'er the bar, like tumblers, vault :  
But you may swear at any rate,  
Things not in nature, for the state ;  
For in all courts of justice here  
A witness is not said to swear,  
But make oath, that is, in plain terms,  
To forge whatever he affirms.'

'I thank you,' quoth the knight, 'for that,  
Because 'tis to my purpose pat,  
For justice, though she's painted blind,  
Is to the weaker side inclined,  
Like charity ; else right and wrong  
Could never hold it out so long,  
And, like blind fortune, with a sleight,  
Convey men's interest, and right,  
From Stiles's pocket into Nokes's,  
As easily as *hocus focus* ;  
Plays fast and loose, makes men obnoxious ;  
And clear again, like *hiccius doctius*.  
Then whether you would take her life,  
Or but recover her for your wife,  
Or be content with what she has,  
And let all other matters pass,  
The business to the law's alone,  
The proof is all it looks upon :  
And you can want no witnesses,  
To swear to anything you please,  
That hardly get their mere expenses  
By th' labour of their consciences,  
Or letting out, to hire, their ears  
To affidavit-customers,  
At inconsiderable values,  
To serve for jurymen or tales,  
Although retained in th' hardest matters  
Of trustees and administrators.'

'For that,' quoth he, 'let me alone ;  
W' have store of such, and all our own,  
Bred up and tutored by our teachers,  
Th' ablest of conscience-stretchers.'

'That's well,' quoth he, 'but I should guess,  
By weighing all advantages,

Your surest way is first to pitch  
On Bongey for a water-witch ;  
And when y' have hanged the conjurer,  
Y' have time enough to deal with her.  
In th' interim spare for no trepans  
To draw her neck into the banns ;  
Ply her with love-letters and billets,  
And bait 'em well for quirks and quillets,  
With trains t' inveigle, and surprise  
Her heedless answers and replies ;  
And if she miss the mouse-trap lines,  
They'll serve for other by-designs ;  
And make an artist understand,  
To copy out her seal, or hand ;  
Or find void places in the paper,  
To steal in something to entrap her :  
Till, with her worldly goods, and body,  
Spite of her heart, she has endowed ye :  
Retain all sorts of witnesses,  
That ply i' th' Temple, under trees,  
Or walk the round, with knights o' th' posts,  
About the cross-legged knights, their hosts ;  
Or wait for customers between  
The pillar-rows in Lincoln's Inn ;  
Where vouchers, forgers, common-bail,  
And affidavit-men ne'er fail  
T' expose to sale all sorts of oaths,  
According to their ears and clothes,  
Their only necessary tools,  
Besides the Gospel, and their souls ;  
And when y' are furnished with all purveys,  
I shall be ready at your service.'  
' I would not give,' quoth Hudibras,  
' A straw to understand a case,  
Without the admirable skill  
To wind and manage it at will ;  
To veer, and tack, and steer a cause,  
Against the weather-gauge of laws ;  
And ring the changes upon cases,  
As plain as noses upon faces ;  
As you have well instructed me,  
For which y' have earned, —here 'tis,—your fee.

I long to practise your advice,  
And try the subtle artifice ;  
To bait a letter, as you bid'—

As, not long after, thus he did ;  
For, having pumped up all his wit,  
And hummed upon it, thus he writ.

AN HEROICAL EPISTLE OF HUDIBRAS TO  
HIS LADY.

I WHO was once as great as Cæsar,  
Am now reduced to Nebuchadnezzar ;  
And from as famed a conqueror,  
As ever took degree in war,  
Or did his exercise in battle,  
By you turned out to grass with cattle :  
For since I am denied access  
To all my earthly happiness,  
Am fallen from the paradise  
Of your good graces, and fair eyes ;  
Lost to the world, and you, I'm sent  
To everlasting banishment,  
Where all the hopes I had t' have won  
Your heart, being dashed, will break my own.

Yet if you were not so severe  
To pass your doom before you hear,  
You'd find, upon my just defence,  
How much y' have wronged my innocence.  
That once I made a vow to you,  
Which yet is unperformed, 'tis true ;  
But not because it is unpaid  
'Tis violated, though delayed :  
Or if it were, it is no fault  
So heinous, as you'd have it thought :  
To undergo the loss of ears,  
Like vulgar hackney perjurers ;  
For there's a difference in the case,  
Between the noble and the base ;  
Who always are observed t' have done't  
Upon as different an account ;  
The one for great and weighty cause,  
To salve its honour ugly flaws ;  
For none are like to do it sooner  
Than those who're nicest of their honour :  
The other, for base gain and pay,  
Forswear and perjure by the day,

And make th' exposing and retailing  
Their souls and consciences a calling.  
It is no scandal, nor aspersion,  
Upon a great and noble person,  
To say, he naturally abhorred  
Th' old-fashioned trick to keep his word,  
Though 'tis perfidiousness and shame  
In meaner men, to do the same :  
For to be able to forget,  
Is found more useful to the great  
Than gout, or deafness, or bad eyes  
To make 'em pass for wondrous wise.  
But though the law, on perjurers,  
Inflicts the forfeiture of ears,  
It is not just, that does exempt  
The guilty, and punish the innocent ;  
To make the ears repair the wrong  
Committed by th' ungoverned tongue ;  
And when one member is forsworn,  
Another to be cropped or torn.  
And if you should, as you design,  
By course of law, recover mine,  
You're like, if you consider right,  
To gain but little honour by't.  
For he that for his lady's sake  
Lays down his life, or limbs at stake,  
Does not so much deserve her favour,  
As he that pawns his soul to have her.  
This y' have acknowledged I have done,  
Although you now disdain to own ;  
But sentence what you rather ought  
T' esteem good service than a fault.  
Besides, oaths are not bound to bear  
That literal sense the words infer,  
But, by the practice of the age,  
Are to be judged how far th' engage ;  
And where the sense by custom 's checked,  
Are found void, and of none effect ;  
For no man takes or keeps a vow,  
But just as he sees others do ;  
Nor are they obliged to be so brittle,  
As not to yield and bow a little :

For as best-tempered blades are found,  
 Before they break, to bend quite round;  
 So truest oaths are still most tough,  
 And, though they bow, are breaking proof.  
 Then wherefore should they not b' allowed  
 In love a greater latitude?  
 For as the law of arms approves  
 All ways to conquest, so should love's;  
 And not be tied to true or false,  
 But make that justest that prevails:  
 For how can that which is above  
 All empire, high and mighty love,  
 Submit its great prerogative,  
 To any other power alive?  
 Shall love, that to no crown gives place,  
 Become the subject of a case?  
 The fundamental law of nature  
 Be over-ruled by those made after?  
 Commit the censure of its cause  
 To any, but its own great laws?  
 Love, that's the world's preservative,  
 That keeps all souls of things alive;  
 Controls the mighty power of fate,  
 And gives mankind a longer date;  
 The life of nature, that restores  
 As fast as time and death devours;  
 To whose free-gift the world does owe  
 Not only earth, but heaven too:  
 For love's the only trade that's driven,  
 The interest of state in heaven,  
 Which nothing but the soul of man  
 Is capable to entertain.  
 For what can earth produce, but love,  
 To represent the joys above?  
 Or who but lovers can converse,  
 Like angels, by the eye-discourse?  
 Address, and compliment by vision,  
 Make love, and court by intuition?  
 And burn in amorous flames as fierce  
 As those celestial ministers?  
 Then how can any thing offend,  
 In order to so great an end?

Or heaven itself a sin resent,  
That for its own supply was meant?  
That merits, in a kind mistake,  
A pardon for th' offence's sake?  
Or if it did not, but the cause  
Were left to th' injury of laws,  
What tyranny can disapprove  
There should be equity in love?  
For laws, that are inanimate,  
And feel no sense of love or hate,  
That have no passion of their own,  
Nor pity to be wrought upon,  
Are only proper to inflict  
Revenge on criminals as strict :  
But to have power to forgive,  
Is empire and prerogative ;  
And 'tis in crowns a nobler gem  
To grant a pardon, than condemn.  
Then, since so few do what they ought,  
'Tis great t' indulge a well-meant fault ;  
For why should he who made address,  
All humble ways, without success,  
And met with nothing in return  
But insolence, affronts and scorn,  
Not strive by wit to countermine,  
And bravely carry his design ?  
He who was used so unlike a soldier,  
Blown up with philtres of love-powder ;  
And after letting blood, and purging,  
Condemned to voluntary scourging ;  
Alarmed with many a horrid fright,  
And clawed by goblins in the night ;  
Insulted on, reviled and jeered,  
With rude invasion of his beard ;  
And when our sex was foully scandalled  
As foully by the rabble handled ;  
Attacked by despicable focs,  
And drubbed with mean and vulgar blows ;  
And, after all, to be debarred  
So much as standing on his guard ;  
When horses, being spurred and pricked,  
Have leave to kick for being kicked ?

*HUDIBRAS TO HIS LADY.*

Or why should you, whose mother-wits  
Are furnished with all perquisites ;  
That with your breeding teeth begin,  
And nursing babies that lie in,  
B' allowed to put all tricks upon  
Our cully sex, and we use none ?  
We, who have nothing but frail vows  
Against your stratagems t' oppose ;  
Or oaths, more feeble than your own,  
By which we are no less put down ?  
You wound, like Parthians, while you fly,  
And kill with a retreating eye ;  
Retire the more, the more we press,  
To draw us into ambushes :  
As pirates all false colours wear,  
T' intrap th' unwary mariner ;  
So women, to surprise us, spread  
The borrowed flags of white and red ;  
Display 'em thicker on their cheeks,  
Than their old grandmothers, the Picts ;  
And raise more devils with their looks,  
Than conjurers' less subtle books :  
Lay trains of amorous intrigues,  
In towers, and curls, and periwigs,  
With greater art and cunning reared,  
Than Philip Nye's thanksgiving beard ;  
Prepost'rously t' entice and gain  
Those to adore 'em they disdain ;  
And only draw 'em into clog,  
With idle names, a catalogue.

A lover is, the more he's brave,  
T' his mistress but the more a slave ;  
And whatsoever she commands,  
Becomes a favour from her hands,  
Which he's obliged t' obey, and must,  
Whether it be unjust or just.  
Then when he is compelled by her  
T' adventures he would else forbear,  
Who, with his honour, can withstand,  
Since force is greater than command ?  
And when necessity's obeyed,  
Nothing can be unjust or bad :



And therefore, when the mighty powers  
Of love, our great ally, and yours,  
Joined forces not to be withstood  
By frail enamoured flesh and blood,  
All I have done, unjust or ill,  
Was in obedience to your will,  
And all the blame that can be due  
Falls to your cruelty, and you.  
Nor are those scandals I confessed,  
Against my will and interest,  
More than is daily done, of course,  
By all men, when they're under force :  
Whence some, upon the rack, confess  
What th' hangman and their prompters please ;  
But are no sooner out of pain,  
Than they deny it all again.  
But when the devil turns confessor,  
Truth is a crime he takes no pleasure  
To hear or pardon, like the founder  
Of liars, whom they all claim under :  
And therefore when I told him none,  
I think it was the wiser done.  
Nor am I without precedent,  
The first that on th' adventure went ;  
All mankind ever did of course,  
And daily does the same, or worse.  
For what romance can show a lover,  
That had a lady to recover,  
And did not steer a nearer course,  
To fall aboard in his amours ?  
And what at first was held a crime,  
Has turned to honourable in time.  
For women first were made for men,  
Not men for them.—It follows, then,  
That men have right to every one,  
And they no freedom of their own ;  
And therefore men have power to choose,  
But they no charter to refuse.  
Hence 'tis apparent that what course  
Soe'er we take to your amours,  
Though by the indirectest way,  
'Tis no injustice or foul play ;

And that you ought to take that course,  
 As we take you, for better or worse,  
 And gratefully submit to those  
 Who you, before another, chose.  
 For why should every savage beast  
 Exceed his great lord's interest?  
 Have freer power than he, in grace  
 And nature, o'er the creature has?  
 Because the laws he since has made  
 Have cut off all the power he had;  
 Retrenched the absolute dominion  
 That nature gave him over women;  
 When all his power will not extend  
 One law of nature to suspend;  
 And but to offer to repeal  
 The smallest clause, is to repel.  
 This, if men rightly understood  
 Their privilege, they would make good,  
 And not, like sots, permit their wives  
 To encroach on their prerogatives,  
 For which sin they deserve to be  
 Kept, as they are, in slavery.

Forgive me, Fair, and only blame  
 Th' extravagancy of my flame,  
 Since 'tis too much at once to show  
 Excess of love and temper too;  
 All I have said that's bad and true,  
 Was never meant to aim at you,  
 Who have so sovereign a control  
 O'er that poor slave of yours, my soul,  
 That, rather than to forfeit you,  
 Has ventured loss of heaven too;  
 Both with an equal power possessed,  
 To render all that serve you blessed;  
 But none like him, who's destined either  
 To have or lose you both together;  
 And if you'll but this fault release,  
 For so it must be, since you please,  
 I'll pay down all that vow, and more,  
 Which you commanded, and I swore.  
 And expiate, upon my skin,  
 Th' arrears in full of all my sin:

For 'tis but just that I should pay  
Th' accruing penance for delay,  
Which shall be done, until it move  
Your equal pity and your love.

The knight, perusing this epistle,  
Believed h' had brought her to his whistle,  
And read it, like a jocund lover,  
With great applause, t' himself, twice over .  
Subscribed his name, but at a fit  
And humble distance, to his wit ;  
And dated it with wondrous art,  
' Given from the bottom of his heart ; '  
Then sealed it with his coat of love,  
A smoking faggot—and above,  
Upon a scroll—' I burn, and weep '—  
And near it—' for her Ladyship,  
Of all her sex most excellent,  
' These to her gentle hands present . '  
Then gave it to his faithful squire,  
With lessons how t' observe, and eye her.  
She first considered which was better,  
To send it back, or burn the letter :  
But guessing that it might import,  
Though nothing else, at least her sport,  
She opened it, and read it out,  
With many a smile and leering flout ;  
Resolved to answer it in kind ;  
And thus performed what she designed.

## THE LADY'S ANSWER TO THE KNIGHT.

THAT you're a beast, and turned to grass,  
Is no strange news, nor ever was,  
At least to me, who once, you know,  
Did from the pound replevin you,  
When both your sword and spurs were won  
In combat, by an Amazon ;  
That sword that did, like fate, determine  
Th' inevitable death of vermin,  
And never dealt its furious blows,  
But cut the throats of pigs and cows,  
By Trulla was, in single fight,  
Disarmed and wrested from its knight,  
Your heels degraded of your spurs,  
And in the stocks close prisoners ;  
Where still they'd lain, in base restraint,  
If I, in pity of your complaint,  
Had not, on honourable conditions,  
Released 'em from the worst of prisons ;  
And what return that favour met,  
You cannot, though you would, forget ;  
When being free, you strove t' evade  
The oaths you had in prison made ;  
Forswore yourself, and first denied it,  
But after owned, and justified it ;  
And when y' had falsely broke one vow,  
Absolved yourself, by breaking two.  
For while you uncakingly submit,  
And beg for pardon at our feet ;  
Discouraged by your guilty fears,  
To hope for quarter, for your ears ;  
And doubting 'twas in vain to sue,  
You claim us boldly as your due,  
Declare that treachery and force,  
To deal with us, is th' only course ;  
We have no title nor pretence  
To body, soul, or conscience,

But ought to fall to that man's share  
That claims us for his proper ware :  
These are the motives which, t' induce,  
Or fright us into love, you use ;  
A pretty new way of gallanting,  
Between soliciting and ranting ;  
Like sturdy beggars, that intreat  
For charity at once, and threat.  
But since you undertake to prove  
Your own propriety in love,  
As if we were but lawful prize  
In war, between two enemies,  
(Or forfeitures which every lover,  
That would but sue for, might recover,  
It is not hard to understand  
The mystery of this bold demand,  
That cannot at our persons aim,  
But something capable of claim.

'Tis not those paltry counterfeit  
French stones, which in our eyes you set,  
But our right diamonds, that inspire  
And set your amorous hearts on fire ;  
Nor can those false St. Martin's beads  
Which on our lips you lay for reds,  
And make us wear like Indian dames,  
Add fuel to your scorching flames,  
But those true rubies of the rock,  
Which in our cabinets we lock.  
'Tis not those orient pearls, our teeth,  
That you are so transported with,  
But those we wear about our necks  
Produce those amorous effects.  
Nor is't those threads of gold, our hair,  
The periwigs you make us wear ;  
But those bright guineas in our chests,  
That light the wildfire in your breasts.  
These love-tricks I've been versed in so,  
That all their sly intrigues I know,  
And can unriddle, by their tones,  
Their mystic cabals, and jargones ;  
Can tell what passions, by their sounds,  
Pine for the beauties of my grounds ;

What raptures fond and amorous,  
 O' th' charms and graces of my house ;  
 What ecstasy and scorching flame,  
 Burns for my money in my name ;  
 What from th' unnatural desire  
 To beasts and cattle, takes its fire ;  
 What tender sigh, and trickling tear,  
 Longs for a thousand pounds a-year ;  
 And languishing transports are fond  
 Of statute, mortgage, bill, and bond.

These are th' attracts which most men fall  
 Enamoured, at first sight, withal ;  
 To these th' address with serenades,  
 And court with balls and masquerades ;  
 And yet, for all the yearning pain  
 Ye've suffered for their loves in vain,  
 I fear they'll prove so nice and coy,  
 To have, and t' hold, and to enjoy,  
 That all your oaths and labour lost,  
 They'll ne'er turn ladies of the post.  
 This is not meant to disapprove  
 Your judgment, in your choice of love,  
 Which is so wise, the greatest part  
 Of mankind study 't as an art ;  
 For love should, like a deodand,  
 Still fall to th' owner of the land ;  
 And where there's substance for its ground,  
 Cannot but be more firm and sound  
 Than that which has the slighter basis  
 Of airy virtue, wit, and graces ;  
 Which is of such thin subtlety,  
 It steals and creeps in at the eye,  
 And, as it can't endure to stay,  
 Steals out again as nice a way.

But love, that its extraction owns  
 From solid gold and precious stones,  
 Must, like its shining parents, prove  
 As solid, and as glorious love.  
 Hence 'tis you have no way t' express  
 Our charms and graces but by these ;  
 For what are lips, and eyes, and teeth,  
 Which beauty invades and conquers with,

But rubies, pearls, and diamonds,  
With which a philtre-love commands?

This is the way all parents prove,  
In managing their children's love ;  
That force 'em t' intermarry and wed,  
As if th' were burying of the dead ;  
Cast earth to earth, as in the grave,  
To join in wedlock all they have,  
And, when the settlement's in force,  
Take all the rest for better or worse ;  
For money has a power above  
The stars, and fate, to manage love,  
Whose arrows, learnèd poets hold,  
That never miss, are tipped with gold.  
And though some say, the parents' claims  
To make love in their children's names,—  
Who, many times, at once provide  
The nurse, the husband, and the bride,  
Feel darts and charms, attracts and flames,  
And woo, and contract, in their names,  
And, as they christen, use to marry 'em,  
And, like their gossips, answer for 'em ;—  
Is not to give in matrimòny,  
But sell and prostitute for money ;  
'Tis better than their own betrothing,  
Who often do 't for worse than nothing,  
And when they're at their own dispose,  
With greater disadvantage choose.  
All this is right ; but, for the course  
You take to do 't, by fraud or force,  
'Tis so ridiculous, as soon  
As told, 'tis never to be done,  
No more than setters can be'ray,  
That tell what tricks they are to play.  
Marriage, at best, is but a vow,  
Which all men either break, or bow ;  
Then what will those forbear to do,  
Who perjure when they do but woo ?  
Such as beforehand swear and lie,  
For earnest to their treachery,  
And, rather than a crime confess,  
With greater strive to make it less :

Like thieves, who, after sentence past,  
Maintain their innocence to the last ;  
And when their crimes were made appear,  
As plain as witnesses can swear,  
Yet when the wretches come to die,  
Will take upon their death a lie.  
Nor are the virtues you confessed,  
T' your ghostly father as you guessed,  
So slight as to be justified,  
By being as shamefully denied ;  
As if you thought your word would pass,  
Point-blank on both sides of a case ;  
Or credit were not to be lost  
B' a brave knight-errant of the post,  
'That eats perfidiously his word,  
And swears his ears through a two-inch board ;  
Can own the same thing, and disown,  
And perjure booty *pro* and *con* ;  
Can make the Gospel serve his turn,  
And help him out to be forsworn ;  
When 'tis laid hands upon, and kissed,  
To be betrayed and sold, like Christ.  
'These are the virtues in whose name  
A right to all the world you claim,  
And boldly challenge a dominion,  
In grace and nature, o'er all women ;  
Of whom no less will satisfy,  
'Than all the sex, your tyranny :  
Although you'll find it a hard province,  
With all your crafty frauds and covins,  
To govern such a numerous crew,  
Who, one by one, now govern you ;  
For if you all were Solomons,  
And wise and great as he was once,  
You'll find they're able to subdue,  
As they did him, and baffle you.  
And if you are imposed upon,  
'Tis by your own temptation done ;  
'That with your ignorance invite,  
And teach us how to use the sleight.  
For when we find y' are still more taken  
With false attracts of our own making,



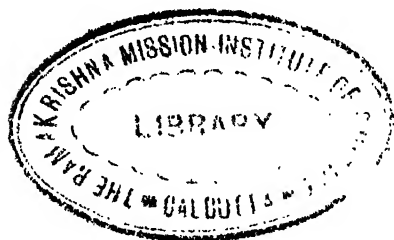
Swear that's a rose, and that's a stone,  
Like sots, to us that laid it on,  
And what we did but slightly prime,  
Most ignorantly daub in rhyme ;  
You force us, in our own defences,  
To copy beams and influences ;  
To lay perfections on the graces,  
And draw attracts upon our faces ;  
And, in compliance to your wit,  
Your own false jewels counterfeit :  
For, by the practice of those arts  
We gain a greater share of hearts ;  
And those deserve in reason most,  
'That greatest pains and study cost :  
'For great perfections are, like heaven,  
'Too rich a present to be given :  
Nor are those master-strokes of beauty  
'To be performed without hard duty,  
Which, when they're nobly done, and well,  
The simple natural excel.  
How fair and sweet the planted rose,  
Beyond the wild in hedges grows ;  
'For, without art, the noblest seeds  
Of flowers degenerate into weeds :  
How dull and rugged, ere 'tis ground  
And polished, looks a diamond !  
Though Paradise were e'er so fair,  
It was not kept so without care.  
The whole world, without art and dress,  
Would be but one great wilderness ;  
And mankind but a savage herd,  
For all that nature has conferred :  
This does but rough-hew and<sup>c</sup>design,  
Leaves art to polish and refine.  
Though women first were made for men,  
Yet men were made for them again :  
For when, outwitted by his wife,  
Man first turned tenant but for life,  
If woman had not interv'ned,  
How soon had mankind had an end !  
And that it is in being yet,  
To us alone you are in debt.

And where's your liberty of choice,  
And our unnatural no-voice ?  
Since all the privilege you boast,  
Falsely usurped, or vainly lost,  
Is now our right, to whose creation  
You owe your happy restoration.  
And if we had not weighty cause  
To not appear in making laws,  
We could, in spite of all your tricks,  
And shallow formal politics,  
Force you our managements t' obey,  
As we to yours, in show, give way.  
Hence 'tis, that while you vainly strive  
T' advance your high prerogative,  
You basely, after all your braves,  
Submit and own yourselves our slaves ;  
And 'cause we do not make it known,  
Nor publicly our interests own,  
Like sots, suppose we have no shares  
In ordering you, and your affairs,  
When all your empire, and command,  
You have from us, at second hand ;  
As if a pilot, that appears  
To sit still only, while he steers,  
And does not make a noise and stir,  
Like every common mariner,  
Knew nothing of the card, nor star,  
And did not guide the man-of-war :  
Nor we, because we don't appear  
In councils, do not govern there ;  
While, like the mighty Prester John,  
Whose person none dares look upon,  
But is preserved in close disguise,  
From being made cheap to vulgar eyes,  
W' enjoy as large a power, unseen,  
To govern him, as he does men ;  
And, in the right of our Pope Joan,  
Make emperors at our feet fall down ;  
Or Joan de Pucelle's braver name,  
Our right to arms and conduct claim  
Who, though a spinster, yet was able  
To serve France for a Grand Constable,

We make and execute all laws ;  
Can judge the judges, and the cause ;  
Prescribe all rules of right or wrong,  
To th' long robe, and the longer tongue,  
'Gainst which the world has no defence,  
But our more powerful eloquence.  
We manage things of greatest weight  
In all the world's affairs of state ;  
Are ministers of war and peace,  
That sway all nations how we please.  
We rule all churches, and their flocks,  
Heretical and orthodox,  
And are the heavenly vehicles  
O' th' spirits in all conventicles :  
By us is all commèrce and trade  
Improved, and managed, and decayed ;  
For nothing can go off so well,  
Nor bears that price, as what we sell.  
We rule in every public meeting,  
And make men do what we judge fitting ;  
Are magistrates in all great towns,  
Where men do nothing but wear gowns.  
We make the man-of-war strike sail,  
And to our braver conduct vail.  
And, when h' has chased his enemies,  
Submit to us upon his knees.  
Is there an officer of state,  
Untimely raised, or magistrate,  
That's haughty and imperious ?  
He's but a journeyman to us,  
That, as he gives us cause to do't,  
Can keep him in, or turn him out.  
We are your guardians, that increase,  
Or waste your fortunes how we please,  
And, as you humour us, can deal  
In all your matters, ill or well.  
'Tis we that can dispose alone,  
Whether your heirs shall be your own,  
To whose integrity you must,  
In spite of all your caution, trust.  
Nor can the rigorousest course  
Prevail, unless to make us worse ;

Who still, the harsher we are used,  
Are further off from being reduced ;  
And scorn t' abate, for any ills,  
The least punctilios of our wills.  
Force does but whet out wits t' apply  
Arts, born with us, for remedy,  
Which all your politics, as yet,  
Have ne'er been able to defeat :  
For, when y' have tried all sorts of ways,  
What fools do we make of you in plays ?  
While all the favours we afford,  
Are but to girt you with the sword,  
To fight our battles in our steads,  
And have your brains beat out o' your heads ;  
Encounter, in despite of nature,  
And fight, at once, with fire and water,  
With pirates, rocks, and storms, and seas,  
Our pride and vanity t' appease ;  
Kill one another, and cut throats,  
For our good graces, and best thoughts ;  
To do your exercise for honour,  
And have your brains beat out the sooner ;  
Or cracked, as learnedly, upon  
Things that are never to be known ;  
And still appear the more industrious,  
The more your projects are preposterous ;  
'To square the circle of the arts,  
And run stark mad to show your parts ;  
Expound the oracle of laws,  
And turn them which way we see cause ;  
Be our solicitors and agents,  
And stand for us in all engagements.  
And these are all the mighty powers  
You vainly boast to cry down ours ;  
And what in real value's wanting,  
Supply with vapouring and ranting :  
Because yourselves are terrified,  
And stop to one another's pride ;  
Believe we have as little wit  
To be out-hectored, and submit :  
By your example, lose that right  
In treaties, which we gained in fight ;

And terrified into an awe,  
 Pass on ourselves a salique law;  
 Or, as some nations use, give place,  
 And truckle to your mighty race;  
 Let men usurp th' unjust dominion,  
 As if they were the better women.



Recd. on 3<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> 24  
 R. R. No. 44.6.1.  
 G. R. No. 19413















821.8/BUT



87368

